

Notes on
1 Samuel
2002 Edition
Dr. Thomas L. Constable

Introduction

TITLE

First and Second Samuel were originally one book called the Book of Samuel in the Hebrew Bible. The Greek Septuagint translation of the Old Testament (made ca. 250 B.C.) was the first to divide it into two books. The Septuagint translators titled these books 1 and 2 Kingdoms. That division has persisted ever since and has even been incorporated into subsequent editions of the Hebrew Bible (since A.D. 1517). The title "Samuel" was given by Jerome in his Latin translation, the Vulgate (ca. A.D. 400).

The Jews gave the name "Samuel" to it because Samuel is the first major character in the book. Samuel anointed both Saul and David, so in this respect he was superior to them both.

DATE AND WRITER

Statements in the Book of Samuel imply that someone who had witnessed at least some of the events recorded wrote it. However the original writer must have written most of it after Samuel's death (i.e., 1 Sam. 25—2 Sam. 24) and some of it even after the division of the kingdom following Solomon's death (e.g., 1 Sam. 27:6). These features have made it difficult to date the book.

"Our guess is that the author was a high state official in frequent attendance at the court, enjoying the full confidence of David and his household, who served David throughout his reign in Jerusalem and also Solomon during the early years of his reign, and whose duties may have been connected with literary work."¹

Most conservative scholars prefer the view that Samuel may have written or been responsible for noting the record of earlier events in the book (chs. 1—24). Then some unidentifiable writer put it in its final form later, perhaps soon after Solomon's death.

Rationalistic critics of the book tend to believe it was the result of much more piecing together, and some of them date its final form as late as 500 B.C.²

¹M. H. Segal, "The Composition of the Books of Samuel," *Jewish Quarterly Review* 55 (1964-65):334.

²For a refutation of this view, see Gleason L. Archer Jr., *A Survey of Old Testament Introduction*, pp. 284-85.

SCOPE

The Book of Samuel covers the period of Israel's history bracketed by Samuel's conception and the end of David's reign. David turned the kingdom over to Solomon in 971 B.C.³ David reigned for 40 and one-half years (2 Sam. 2:11; 5:5). This means he came to power in 1011 B.C. Saul also reigned for 40 years (Acts 13:21) so he became king in 1051 B.C. We can estimate the date of Samuel's birth fairly certainly on the basis of chronological references in the text to have been about 1121 B.C.⁴ Thus the Book of Samuel covers about 1121-971 B.C., or about 150 years of history.

We should note that the first part of 1 Samuel overlaps historically with the end of the judges period that we find in the Book of Judges. Apparently Samson was born just a few years before Samuel. Samson's 20-year judgeship evidently began shortly before the battle of Aphek (1104 B.C.) at which time Eli died (1 Sam. 4:18). It ended not many years before the battle of Mizpah (1084 B.C.) when the Philistine domination of Israel ceased temporarily (1 Sam. 7:13). Samuel's ministry therefore probably ran concurrent with that of Samson until Samson died. Saul began to reign about 35 years after Samson died (i.e., 1051 B.C.). Samuel evidently lived about 30 years after that.⁵

OLD TESTAMENT HISTORY**Events Biblical References**

Creation to Israel's move to Egypt Genesis 1—50

The Exodus Exodus 1—18

Israel at Mt. Sinai Exodus 19—Numbers 10

The Wilderness Wanderings Numbers 11—21

Israel on the Plains of Moab Numbers 22—Joshua 2

The Conquest and Division of Canaan Joshua 3—24

The Amphictyony Judges 1—1 Samuel 7

The Reign of Saul 1 Samuel 8—31; 1 Chronicles 10

³See Edwin R. Thiele, *The Mysterious Numbers of the Hebrew Kings*, pp. 51-52.

⁴See Eugene H. Merrill, *Kingdom of Priests*, pp. 149-50.

⁵Ibid.

OLD TESTAMENT HISTORY

Events Biblical References

The Reign of David 2 Samuel 1—24; 1 Chronicles 11—29

The Reign of Solomon 1 Kings 1—11; 2 Chronicles 1—9

The Divided Monarchy 1 Kings 12—2 Kings 17; 2 Chronicles 10—31

The Surviving Kingdom of Judah 2 Kings 18—25; 2 Chronicles 32-36

The Return under Zerubbabel Ezra 1—6

The Return under Ezra Ezra 7—10

The Return under Nehemiah Nehemiah 1—13

MESSAGE⁶

First and 2 Samuel are really one story. The translators divided them into two books for convenience, not because of subject matter.

First Samuel records Israel's transition from amphictyony to monarchy.

The key passage that explains this transition is 8:4-7. Two statements from this passage are especially significant.

The human desire that produced the transition expressed itself in verse 5: "Now appoint a king for us to judge us *like all the nations*." God had brought Israel into existence as a nation to be unlike all the nations (Exod. 19:5-6). The essence of its uniqueness was Yahweh's rule over it as King. God wanted Israel to be a demonstration for all the world to see how glorious it can be to live under the authority of God.

The real meaning of the people's request comes out in verse 7: ". . . *they have rejected me from being king over them*." During the period of the judges, religious apostasy spread and characterized Israel. The people refused to obey their King. It is this attitude that finds expression in verse 5. The people wanted to substitute the false for the true. This is the essence of sin, and it results in idolatry. Every idol is a witness to man's need of God. When people reject the true God they must put something in His place to meet that need. Human beings *must* have a god.

⁶Adapted from G. Campbell Morgan, *Living Messages of the Books of the Bible*, 1:1:146-58.

Israel turned from God as her King in 1 Samuel. She desired a king like the other nations. This book shows the immediate effects of that desire.

One of the great revelations of 1 Samuel is how from the human viewpoint God adapts to continue His reign.

This statement appears to contradict 8:7, but it does not. The people rejected Yahweh, but they did not dethrone Him. The first act is possible, the second is not. This is a major lesson of 1 Samuel. The great revelation of this book is not primarily its three central figures: Samuel, Saul, and David. It is Yahweh reigning by adapting to human situations and moving surely and steadily toward the fulfillment of His purposes. In spite of disobedience or obedience, failure or success, rebellious or loyal people, the reign of God moves on. We see this great lesson in the history of 1 Samuel's three central figures: Samuel, Saul, and David.

The writer introduced Samuel's story with his mother Hannah's experience with God. Hannah was a great woman of faith who lived in the judges period. Her faith became God's foothold for advance. Her song reveals a profound appreciation for Yahweh as the God who reigns over all (2:6-8, 10). The similarities between this prayer and Mary's Magnificat in Luke 1 are interesting and noteworthy.

Samuel was a prophet. In one sense he was the first of the prophets (Acts 3:24). Of course, Moses was a prophet and so was Abraham, but Samuel was the first of the order of prophets who mediated between God and the Israelites during the monarchy. The kings of Israel and Judah were never mediators between God and the people in the sense of speaking for God to the people. When the Israelites rejected Yahweh as their king, He withdrew from close communion and intimate fellowship with them. He never recognized their kings as standing between Himself and them to mediate His Word to the people. He chose their kings for them. He allowed their desire for a human king to work itself out in ultimate disaster through the centuries that followed. Yet He never spoke to the people through the king. He always spoke to them through the prophets. Samuel was the first of these. David, of course, was a king and a prophet. The role of the kings was to govern the people. The role of the prophets was to reveal God's will to them.

With Samuel the office of prophet in Israel emerges as that of Yahweh's authoritative representative to His people. Samuel became the king-maker finding and anointing both Saul and David. From now on when God had a message for the people it normally did not come directly to the king but to the king and the people through the prophet. The prophet's office was always superior to that of Israel's kings. (You have the privilege of speaking for God to your generation. You have a high calling similar to that of Israel's prophets.) When Israel rejected Yahweh as her king, God chose Samuel, the child of a woman's simple faith, trained him in the tabernacle, and called him when he was only a boy. Then He gave him a message to deliver and sent him to anoint Saul as the king after the people's own heart, and David as the king after God's own heart. The prophets became God's mediators, His messengers, and the interpreters of His law. Thus Yahweh reigned though He adapted His methods of ruling by raising up the prophets. He called

Samuel as the first of these mediators. During the monarchy God provided guidance through two offices rather than through one as He had done previously. The kings provided political leadership, and the prophets gave the people spiritual leadership. God had previously provided both types of leadership through single individuals namely Moses, Joshua, and the judges.

Saul's story is one of the most tragic in Scripture. It is unusually fascinating and has tremendous power in its appeal to our lives. When God placed Saul on Israel's throne He answered the prayer of His rebellious people in 8:5. God "gave them their request, but sent a wasting disease among them" (Ps. 106:15; NASB).

Saul was a revelation to the Israelites of what the possession of "a king like the nations" really meant. He had unusual physical strength, but he was fitful and he failed the people. He had mental acumen, but he was moody and eventually turned into a madman. He was sluggish and dull spiritually lacking in spiritual insight and power, and eventually he abandoned Yahweh for a witch.

His reign was also a disaster. At the beginning of his reign, Israel was virtually without a leader. At its end it was under the control of an enemy neighbor. Saul was never able to expand the borders of Israel because he never was strong enough to dominate his enemy neighbors. David on the other hand did both of these things. At the end of Saul's reign, Israel had almost destroyed itself through its wars with the Philistines.

David's story is one of the most glorious in Scripture. After Saul, God gave His people another king, but this time he was a man after God's own heart.

God prepared David for the throne by putting him through training as a shepherd in the fields, a courtier in the palace, and an "outlaw" in exile. (By "outlaw" I do not mean David was lawless but that he lived outside Saul's control.) His shepherd training prepared him to care for and protect the Israelites under his charge. His courtier experience prepared him to deal with high governmental leaders. His "outlaw" years perfected the disciplines that enabled him to become a strong ruler. These disciplines included relying on God in every situation, practicing self-restraint, and leading his people.

In all David's training God was reigning, moving forward to the fulfillment of His plans and purposes. God had previously done this by making the child of faith, Samuel, His prophet. He had also done this by making outwardly promising Saul a revelation to the nation of her sins in turning away from God.

The second great revelation of this book is that people cooperate with God by either being loyal or by being disloyal to Him.

In Samuel's case he had opportunity to glorify God because of his parentage, his call by God, and his appointment as God's prophet. He responded obediently, with loyalty to

God. Consequently God's messages got delivered, and God's work moved ahead. Samuel was an instrument of blessing.

In Saul's case he had opportunity to glorify God too. His opportunity came in his call by God, his anointing by Samuel, his friendship with Samuel, his popularity with the people, and his personal abilities. He responded disobediently, with disloyalty to God as seen in his vacillating and self-will. Consequently he failed as a king, and he died under the judgment of God. His life was a failure.

In David's case his opportunities were his call, his anointing, his waiting, and his suffering. He responded obediently, with loyalty to God. Consequently he became God's instrument of progress and blessing. He was a success.

Each man had his opportunity, made his response, and experienced the consequences of his response. Two obeyed, one disobeyed. All cooperated with God in fulfilling His ultimate purposes either to his own blessing or to his own blasting.

As a result of these two major revelations I would summarize the message of 1 Samuel as follows. God will accomplish His purposes regardless of man's personal response to Him. However man's response to God's revealed will determines a person's own success or failure in life.

First Samuel teaches us the methods of the sovereign God. All territory is within God's jurisdiction, every person is under His control, and all events are in His hands. All of God's plans and purposes are moving toward accomplishment. He makes use of all antagonistic facts and forces as well as all positive facts and forces. He also makes use of all the agents He has chosen to use regardless of their responses. Paul's comments in 2 Tim. 2:20-21 are very much to the point here.

First Samuel also teaches us that God's ultimate victory is independent of the attitudes and actions of individuals and groups of people (e.g., Israel) toward Him. Nevertheless the ultimate destiny of individuals and groups of people depends on their attitudes and actions toward Him.

Samuel was obedient, was God's instrument, and experienced deliverance. Saul was disobedient, was God's instrument, and experienced destruction. David was obedient, was God's instrument, and experienced deliverance. My attitudes and actions do not determine God's ultimate victory, but they do determine my ultimate destiny. Everything depends on my choices and me regarding my earthly destiny. Nothing depends on me regarding God's ultimate victory. God uses all people, loyal and rebellious, to produce His ultimate purposes. However we determine the outcome of our lives by our attitudes and responses to Him. We see these principles working themselves out around us all the time. Dr. Walvoord is an example of a Samuel or a David in our day. The DTS graduates in prison are examples of the Sauls of our day.

OUTLINE

- I. Eli and Samuel chs. 1—3
 - A. The change from barrenness to fertility 1:1—2:10
 - 1. Hannah's condition 1:1-8
 - 2. Hannah's vow 1:9-18
 - 3. Hannah's obedience 1:19-28
 - 4. Hannah's song 2:1-10
 - B. The contrast between Samuel and Eli's sons 2:11-36
 - 1. Eli's sons' wickedness 2:11-17
 - 2. Hannah's godly influence on Samuel and its effect 2:18-21
 - 3. Eli's lack of influence on his sons and its effect 2:22-26
 - 4. The oracle against Eli's house 2:27-36
 - C. God's first revelation to Samuel ch. 3
 - 1. Samuel's call 3:1-18
 - 2. Samuel's ministry 3:19—4:1a
- II. The history of the ark of the covenant 4:1b—7:1
 - A. The capture of the ark 4:1b-22
 - 1. The battle of Aphek 4:1b-11
 - 2. The response of Eli 4:12-18
 - 3. The response of Phinehas' wife 4:19-22
 - B. Pagan fertility foiled by God ch. 5
 - C. The ark returned to Israel by God 6:1—7:1
 - 1. The plan to terminate God's judgment 6:1-9
 - 2. The return of the ark to Bethshemesh 6:10-18
 - 3. The removal of the ark to Kiriath-jearim 6:19—7:1
- III. Samuel and Saul 7:2—15:35
 - A. Samuel's ministry as Israel's judge 7:2-17
 - 1. Samuel's spiritual leadership 7:2-4
 - 2. National repentance and deliverance 7:5-14
 - 3. Samuel's regular ministry 7:15-17

- B. Kingship given to Saul chs. 8—12
 - 1. The demand for a king ch. 8
 - 2. The anointing of Saul 9:1—10:16
 - 3. The choice of Saul by lot 10:17-27
 - 4. Saul's effective leadership in battle 11:1-11
 - 5. The confirmation of Saul as king 11:12—12:25

- C. Kingship removed from Saul chs. 13—15
 - 1. Saul's disobedience at Gilgal 13:1-15
 - 2. Saul's struggle against the Philistines 13:16—14:23
 - 3. Saul's cursing of Jonathan 14:24-46
 - 4. Saul's limited effectiveness in battle 14:47-52
 - 5. Yahweh's final rejection of Saul ch. 15

- IV. Saul and David 1 Sam. 16—31
 - A. David's rise as the new anointed 16:1—18:5
 - 1. God's selection of David for kingship ch. 16
 - 2. The reason for God's selection of David ch. 17
 - 3. The results of God's selection of David ch. 18:1—19:17

 - B. David driven out by Saul 19:18—20:42
 - 1. God's deliverance in Ramah 19:18-24
 - 2. Jonathan's advocacy for David ch. 20

 - C. David in exile chs. 21—31
 - 1. David's initial movements chs. 21—22
 - 2. Saul's pursuit of David ch. 23
 - 3. David's goodness to two fools ch. 24—26
 - 4. The end of Saul's reign 27—31

(Continued in notes on 2 Samuel)

Exposition

As with all the historical narratives of the Old Testament, the Holy Spirit's purpose in giving us the books of 1 and 2 Samuel was not just to record events that transpired. It was primarily to teach spiritual lessons to the original readers, and to readers of all time, by revealing the causes and effects of various human responses to God's grace.⁷ God guided the inspired writers of Scripture to teach theology as well as to record history. This is clear in all the so-called historical books of both Testaments. We can see this as we examine the reasons God selected the particular events and facts that He recorded for inclusion out of the mass of possible data that He could have set forth.

Scholars have disputed what it was that the writer chose to emphasize primarily in the Books of Samuel. Some have felt his unifying purpose was to demonstrate the sovereignty of God.⁸ Some believe it was to show that God provides leadership for His people.⁹ Others have seen the purpose as something else. I believe those who see the record of what happens to individuals and nations when they trust and obey God's Word or fail to do so have identified the primary purpose.¹⁰

For the Israelites, their commitment to obey the Mosaic Covenant out of trust in God and gratitude for His calling them to receive His grace would result in God blessing them (Deut. 28:1-14). However if they despised His grace and departed from His will as expressed for them in the Mosaic Covenant, He would curse them (Deut. 28:15-68). Moses had explained God's "blessing" in Deuteronomy. It included fertility for the Israelites personally as well as for their herds and crops. It included the ability to defeat their neighbor enemies and to enjoy peace and prosperity. It also included other material and social advantages as well as the enjoyment of an intimate spiritual relationship with God. God's "curse" on the other hand would be barrenness, defeat, oppression, and many other undesirable conditions.

In Samuel we have a record of how commitment to the will of God results in blessing for individuals, groups of individuals, and whole nations. This commitment should rest on an appreciation for God's initiative in reaching out to undeserving sinners in grace. We also see how disregard for God's Word because of a failure to appreciate God's grace inevitably leads to blasting, a curse from God. These lessons are not new; the Books of Samuel are not emphasizing these things for the first time in Scripture. The Book of Joshua is a positive lesson that people who trust and obey God succeed. They even accomplish supernatural feats and prosper. The Book of Judges gives the other side of that coin. People who disregard God fail, become unproductive, suffer defeat, and die. The Books of Samuel continue the emphasis begun in Genesis and Exodus that

⁷See Steven D. Mathewson, "Guidelines for Understanding and Proclaiming Old Testament Narratives," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 154:616 (October-December 1997):410-35, for help in preaching narrative portions of the Old Testament.

⁸E.g., Ludwig Kohler, *Old Testament Theology*, p. 94.

⁹Stanley D. Tucker, "The Theology of the Book of Samuel: A Study Of God's Humiliation or Exaltation of Leaders," *Biblical Viewpoint* 12:2 (1978):152; David F. Payne, *I & II Samuel*, p. 5..

¹⁰E.g., Walther Eichrodt, *Theology of the Old Testament*, 1:26.

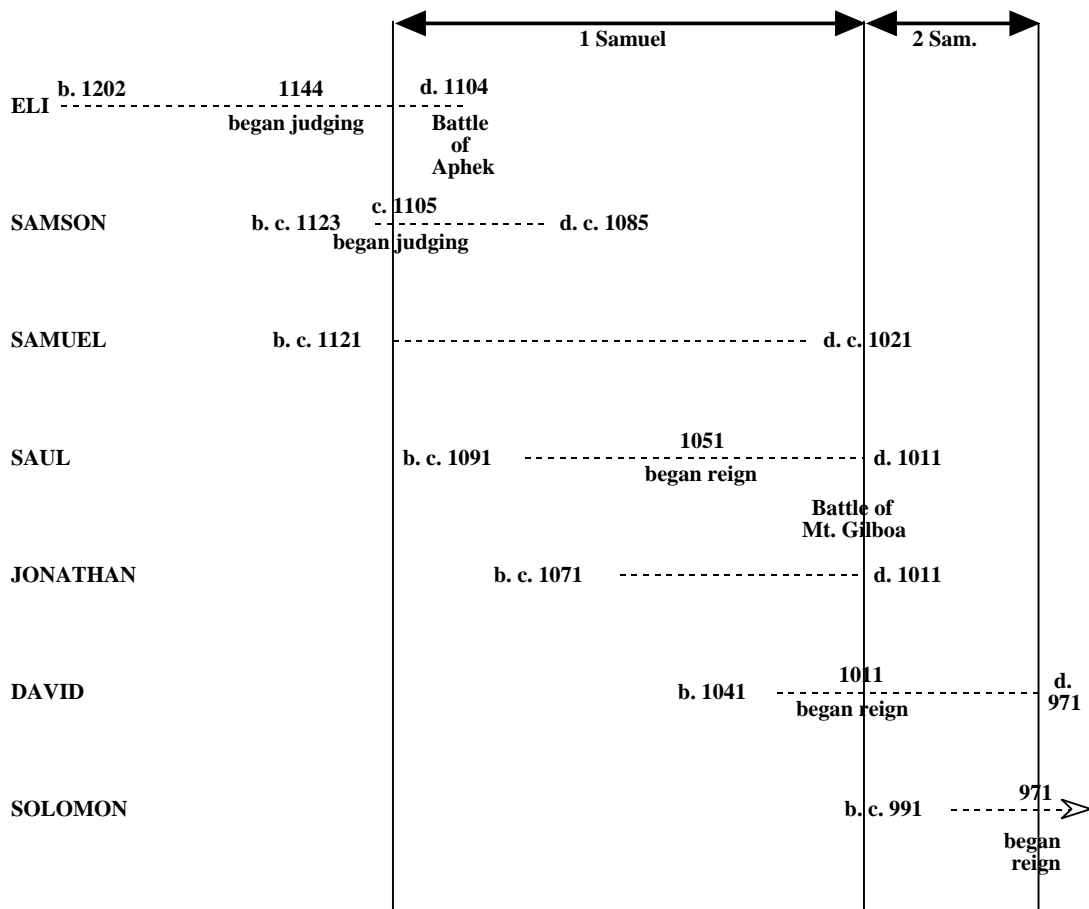
Deuteronomy clarified, namely, that our response to God's grace will determine our destiny.

I. ELI AND SAMUEL CHS. 1—3

First Samuel first contrasts Israel's last two judges (Eli, a failure, and Samuel, a success) and then Israel's first two kings (Saul, a failure, and David, a success).¹¹

The first major section of Samuel sharply contrasts obedience and disobedience to the will of God as God expressed that for Israel in the Mosaic Covenant. This contrast is clear in all seven major sections of 1 and 2 Samuel. The events in this section took place during Eli's 40-year judgeship (4:18; 1144-1104 B.C.).¹²

Chronology of 1 & 2 Samuel



¹¹Ronald F. Youngblood, "1, 2 Samuel," in *Deuteronomy-2 Samuel*, vol. 3 of *The Expositor's Bible Commentary*, p. 569.

¹²Eugene H. Merrill, "Paul's Use of 'About 450 Years' in Acts 13:20," *Bibliotheca Sacra* (July-September 1981):247, dated Samson's death about 1085 B.C. So 1 Samuel overlaps Judges chronologically.

A. THE CHANGE FROM BARRENNESS TO FERTILITY 1:1—2:10

In the first subsection (1:1—2:10) we have the joyful story of Samuel's miraculous birth and his mother's gratitude to God for reversing her barrenness and making her fertile. The significance of this story is not only that it gives us the record of how Samuel was born and that his mother was a godly woman. It also shows how God, in faithfulness to His promise to bless those who put Him first (Deut. 28), did so even for a despised woman in Israel (cf. Rahab and Ruth). He brought blessing to all Israel because of her faith.

1. Hannah's deliverance ch. 1

"I Samuel 1 is presented as a conventional birth narrative which moves from barrenness to birth. Laid over that plot is a second rhetorical strategy which moves from complaint to thanksgiving. With the use of this second strategy, the birth narrative is transposed and becomes an intentional beginning point for the larger Samuel-Saul-David narrative. Hannah's story begins in utter helplessness (silence); it anticipates Israel's royal narrative which also begins in helplessness. As Hannah moves to voice (2,1-10), so Israel's narrative moves to power in the historical process. Both Hannah's future and Israel's future begin in weakness and need, and move toward power and well-being. The narrative of I Samuel 1 functions to introduce the theological theme of 'cry-thanks' which appears in the larger narrative in terms of Israelite precariousness and Yahweh's powerful providence. Our chapter corresponds canonically to II Samuel 24 which portrays David in the end (like Hannah) as a needy, trusting suppliant. The two chapters, witnesses to vulnerable faith, together bracket Israel's larger story of power."¹³

The problem 1:1-2

Samuel's parents lived near Ramathaim-zophim (lit. two heights, elsewhere called Ramah, e.g., v. 19, lit. height) in Ephraim in central Canaan.¹⁴ Samuel's father, Elkanah, was an Ephraimite by residence. He was really a Levite by blood (1 Chron. 6:33-38). Ramah was not one of the Levitical towns in Ephraim. Elkanah's residence raises initial questions about his commitment to the Mosaic Law. Was he really where he should have been, and does this indicate that the will of God may not have been very important for him? In the story that follows it is Hannah rather than Elkanah who emerges as the person of outstanding faith.

¹³Walter Brueggemann, "I Samuel 1: A Sense of a Beginning," *Zeitschrift für die Alttestamentliche Wissenschaft* 102:1 (1990):48.

¹⁴There was also a Ramah in the territory of Benjamin farther to the south (Judg. 19:13; et al.), and one in Naphtali to the north (Judg. 19:29, 36).

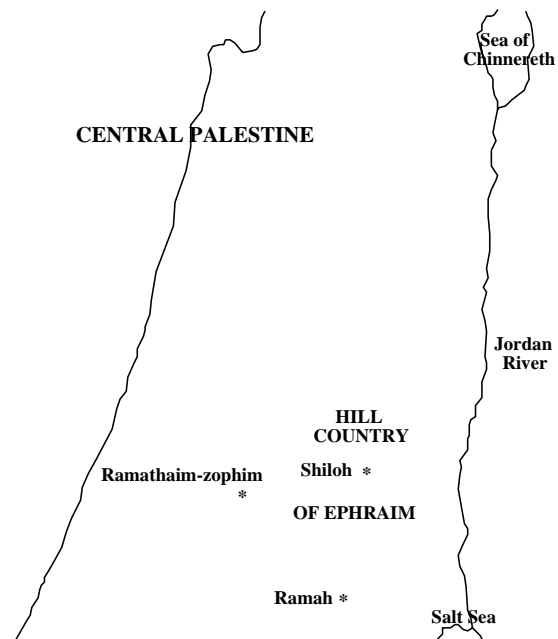
In the Hebrew Bible the description of Samuel's father and Samson's father are almost identical (cf. Judg. 13:2). The Holy Spirit may have written this to remind us of the unusual Nazirite status of both judges.¹⁵

Hannah's problem was that she was barren (v. 2).

Hannah's barrenness 1:3-8

Elkanah was a bigamist, a condition forbidden by God (Gen. 2:24). However, he loved Hannah dearly and gave her special consideration since she was infertile (v. 5; cf. Jacob's relationship with Rachel and Leah). Hannah's sterility may have prompted Elkanah to take Peninnah as a second wife.¹⁶

God had promised to bless His people with many descendants if they obeyed Him (Deut. 28:11). Consequently many Israelites saw a woman's inability to bear children not just as a natural handicap but also as a curse from God. Peninnah, her "rival" (v. 6), may have accused Hannah of some sin in her life that had apparently brought God's curse on her (v. 6; cf. Hagar's treatment of Sarai). From the context we learn that Hannah was an unusually godly woman. Probably her barrenness was not a divine punishment for sin. It appears to have been a natural condition that God placed on her for His own purposes some of which become clear as this story unfolds (cf. John 9:1-3).



Elkanah was careful to observe some of the statutes in the Mosaic Law such as worshipping God yearly at Shiloh. However, he seems to have been somewhat insensitive to the depth of Hannah's suffering as a barren Israelite woman (v. 8).

The name "Lord of hosts" occurs first in the Old Testament in verse 3.¹⁷ This is a very commonly used divine name in the rest of Samuel, Kings, Chronicles, and the prophetic books. The "hosts" are the armies of the sovereign God and consist of humans (17:45), angels (Josh. 5:14), and stars (Isa. 40:26). This name expresses the infinite resources and power at God's disposal as He fights for His people.

¹⁵Youngblood, p. 570.

¹⁶Ibid., p. 572.

¹⁷See Matitiah Tsevat, "Studies in the Book of Samuel," *Hebrew Union College Annual* 36 (1965):49-58.

"Three dramatic elements in the scene make the problem of barrenness more poignant for the narrative.

"First, we are told twice that 'The Lord had closed her womb' (v. 5, 6). . . . Second, while it is Yahweh who has created Hannah's problem, Hannah's response is not against Yahweh, but against Peninnah (v. 6-7). . . .

"Third, the scene ends with Elkanah's four-fold question, three times *lameh*, 'why,' plus a concluding question about his own value to Hannah (v. 8). Elkanah's questions are voiced in pathos. He does not understand Hannah's response; moreover he is helpless to change Hannah's situation. Elkanah is helpless about the problem of barrenness caused by Yahweh, and he is helpless in the destructive interaction between his wives. Hannah is deeply needy and immobilized, and her husband is helpless. The family system seems desperately closed. The only opening is that every year Elkanah goes up to sacrifice to Yahweh, the very one who has closed Hannah's womb."¹⁸

Hannah's lament and Eli's response 1:9-18

These verses provide some insight into the godly character of Samuel's mother and her personal relationship with Yahweh. That she would offer her son to God's service for life was similar to asking that God would lead your child into "the ministry." Asking that he would be a lifetime Nazarite was similar to asking that your child would dedicate himself completely to God, not just by profession but also by conviction. Hannah showed that she desired the honor of Yahweh more than simply gaining relief from her abusers. She wanted to make a positive contribution to God's program for Israel by providing a godly leader, not just to bear a child.¹⁹

The record of Eli's observations of and dialogue with Hannah (vv. 12-17) confirms the sincerity and appropriateness of her petition. Eli did not rebuke Hannah but commended her.²⁰ However, Eli's response to Hannah reveals his instability. He misunderstood Hannah because he did not perceive her correctly. This weakness surfaces again later and accounts for his demise. Prayer in the ancient world was usually audible (cf. Ps. 3:4; 4:1; 6:9; et al.; Dan. 6:10-11).²¹

Pouring out one's soul before God (v. 15) graphically describes earnest burdened praying.²² This kind of praying frequently results in a release of anxiety as it did in Hannah's case (v. 18; cf. Phil. 4:6-7).

¹⁸Brueggemann, p. 35.

¹⁹Compare the blessing God gave Samson's parents in Judges 13:2-5 that probably came just a few years before Hannah made her vow.

²⁰This is the only Old Testament passage that shows a priest blessing an individual worshipper.

²¹Youngblood, p. 573.

²²G. W. Ahlstrom, "1 Samuel 1,15," *Biblica* 60:2 (1979):254.

"The issues now turn not on barrenness and birth, but upon submission to Yahweh and trust in Yahweh. Thus while the two scenes share a common problem, they approach the problem very differently. Scene 1 [vv. 3-8] treats the problem of barrenness as a matter of family struggle. In scene 2 [vv. 9-18] the same problem has been redefined in Yahwistic categories of need, submission, and trust."²³

When believers find ourselves in difficult situations, we should commit our desires to God in prayer. In prayer we should seek what is best for God primarily (cf. Matt. 6:9-10). The purpose of prayer is to enable us to accomplish God's will, not to get Him to do our will. We should also pray earnestly. When we pray this way, God will enable us to feel peace in our problem (cf. Phil. 4:6-7).

A birth announcement 1:19-20

Hannah's godly character surfaces again in the naming of Samuel. His name means "heard of God" or "God hears." Hannah, whose name means "grace" or "graciousness," recognized that Samuel's birth was not just a coincidence but an answer to prayer and a supernatural gift from God.

"Yahweh is the key actor in the narrative. Hannah could speak complaint and petition only because she submitted to Yahweh. Eli could give assurance to her only because he spoke on behalf of Yahweh. The son is born only because Yahweh remembered. Everything depends on asking Yahweh and being answered by Yahweh. Thus scene 3 [vv. 19-20] resolves scene 1 [vv. 3-8], but only by way of the decisive intrusion of Yahweh through scene 2 [vv. 9-18]."²⁴

The parents' thanksgiving 1:21-28a

"Scenes 3 [vv. 19-20] and 4 [vv. 21-28a] are a pair, not unlike the pairing of 1 [vv. 3-8] and 2 [vv. 9-19]. They are the two scenes of resolution. . . . These two scenes are concerned not with the birth, but with Hannah coming to terms with the reality of Yahweh. She is portrayed as the one who is needy, trustful, submissive, and grateful. She is a model of fidelity."²⁵

The Mosaic Law required an offering to God when He granted a vow (Lev. 27:1-8). Elkanah went to the central sanctuary to make this offering shortly after Samuel's birth (v. 21). The text refers to Hannah's vow as Elkanah's (v. 21). It was his vow in this sense: since he did not cancel it when he heard about it, he became responsible for it as Hannah's husband (cf. Num. 30:1-8).

²³Brueggemann, p. 37.

²⁴Ibid.

²⁵Ibid., p. 39.

Samuel may have been as old as three years before Hannah weaned him and brought him to the sanctuary (v. 23; cf. 2 Maccabees 7:27). The three-year-old bull and the flour (v. 24) were evidently for a burnt offering (an offering that represented the worshipper's total dedication to God, Lev. 1) and for food respectively.²⁶ Hannah could have offered a less expensive animal sacrifice (Lev. 12:6), but she was very grateful.

The beginning of Samuel's worship 1:28b

"The future of the story now to be told in I and II Samuel concerns not only the newly born son, but the rule of Yahweh to whom laments are addressed and thanksgiving uttered. No wonder the narrative ends with yielding, grateful, trusting worship."²⁷

The "he" who worshipped before the Lord (v. 28) may refer to Elkanah, the leader of the family and the main man in the context. It might also refer to Eli to whom Hannah was speaking.²⁸ I think it probably refers to Samuel, the most immediate antecedent of "he" in verse 28. If this interpretation is correct, this reference marks the beginning of Samuel's ministry that all of chapter 1 anticipates.

Hannah's obedience to the Mosaic Law in making her vow (vv. 9-11) and then in fulfilling it (vv. 24-28) contrasts with the disobedience of Eli's sons (2:11-36). In Deuteronomy 28 Moses predicted the outcome of these two responses to God's Word, and the writer of this book illustrated it in 1 Samuel 1 and 2.

Hannah's obedience resulted in great blessing. God blessed her with fertility, He blessed her and her husband with this child and other offspring (2:20-21), and He blessed Israel with a spiritual leader.

"This beautiful story of a faithful mother in Israel whom God honored by giving her a son is the crown jewel in the argument of the book. Yahweh looks for faithful, godly men and women whom He can set over His People."²⁹

Godly parents should give their children away—to the Lord for His service.

2. Hannah's song 2:1-10

Some commentators have seen Hannah's prayer as a non-essential song of praise included in the text for sentimental reasons, but this magnificent prayer provides the key to interpreting the rest of 1 and 2 Samuel. In this prayer, which contains no petition, Hannah

²⁶The Hebrew word for flour used here, *qemah*, never occurs in a sacrificial context except once where it is unaccompanied by an animal sacrifice (Num. 5:15).

²⁷Brueggemann, p. 39.

²⁸Youngblood, p. 575.

²⁹Homer Heater Jr., "A Theology of Samuel and Kings," in *A Biblical Theology of the Old Testament*, pp. 121-22.

articulated her belief that God rewards trust with blessing. He turns barrenness into fertility, not just in her case but universally. Mary, the mother of Jesus, incorporated some of Hannah's song in her own "Magnificat" (Luke 1:46-55).

"The Song of Hannah appears near the beginning of 1 Samuel, and the Song of David appears near the end of 2 Samuel. These two remarkably similar hymns of praise thus constitute a kind of *inclusio*, framing the main contents of the books and reminding us that the two books were originally one. Both begin by using 'horn' (1 Sam 2:1; 2 Sam 22:3) as a metaphor for 'strength,' referring to God as the 'Rock,' and reflecting on divine 'deliverance/salvation' (1 Sam 2:1-2; 2 Sam 22:2-3). Both end by paralleling 'his king' with 'his anointed' (1 Sam 2:10; 2 Sam 22:51)."³⁰

Hannah praised God because He had provided salvation for His people (vv. 1-2). She had learned that God will humble people who view themselves as self-sufficient (vv. 3-4), but He will help those who cast themselves on Him asking Him to provide what they need (vv. 5-8). Therefore the godly and the wicked will experience vastly different fates (vv. 9-10). The Old Testament writers spoke of Sheol (v. 6), the abode of the dead, as though it was a huge underground cave where judgment takes place (cf. Deut. 32:22; Ps. 88:3-6; et al.). The whole point of this inspired poetic prayer is that people should trust in the Lord. Hannah had done this, and God had blessed her miraculously.

Hannah's song contains a reference to a king that God would raise up as His anointed representative to lead Israel (v. 10). This is one of a few such references made by an ordinary Israelite that God recorded in Scripture (cf. Judg. 8:22-23). God had revealed through Moses that in the future He would raise up a king for His people (Deut. 17). God revealed His purpose to set up a king over His people as early as Genesis (Gen. 17:6, 16; 35:11; 49:10; cf. Gen. 1:26-28). Hannah's reference to this king shows that the people of Israel looked forward to the fulfillment of that promise. Shortly after this the people demanded a king from God (8:4-7).

The motif of God making the barren fertile in response to their trust and obedience runs throughout the rest of 1 and 2 Samuel (cf. Samuel). So does the corollary truth that God will make the "powerful" who are not trusting and obedient infertile and ultimately dead (cf. Saul). Likewise the motif of the Lord's anointed king is a major one in 1 and 2 Samuel (cf. David).

In 1:1—2:10 we also find for the first time the reversal of fortune motif that is a major literary device in 1 and 2 Samuel. People apparently unimportant become important, and those who appear to be important become unimportant. The crucial factor for them as Israelites was *their response to the will of God* as contained in the Mosaic Covenant.

God will bless people who want to further His program in the world by making it possible for them to do that. He will even do supernatural things to enable them to do so. Natural limitations do not limit God. Knowledge of what God has revealed about Himself

³⁰Youngblood, p. 579.

and His program is what God uses to inspire trust in Himself and interest in His program. God will even reverse the fortunes of people in response to their response to His will.

B. THE CONTRAST BETWEEN SAMUEL AND ELI'S SONS 2:11-36

Samuel's innocence and the godlessness of Eli's sons contrast strongly in this pericope (section). Samuel would succeed and become a channel of God's blessing. Eli's sons would fail, would become a source of frustration to Eli and to the Israelites, and would ultimately perish.

"The section [2:11—4:1] poignantly illustrates the theme of 'Hannah's Song' as it is epitomized in 2:7b, 'he brings low, and also exalts'. For it is under the auspices of God who has determined the ruin of Hophni and Phinehas that Samuel makes his mark."³¹

1. Eli's sons' wickedness 2:11-17

Eli's sons were not only evil in their personal lives, but they flagrantly disregarded the will of God even as they served as leaders of Israel's worship of Yahweh. They neither knew the Lord (in the sense of paying attention to Him, v. 12) nor treated His offerings as special (v. 17; cf. Mal. 1:6-14). The writer documented these evaluations with two instances of their specific practices (vv. 13-14, and 15-16). The Law ordered the priests to handle the offerings in particular ways to respect God's holiness (cf. Lev. 3:3, 5; 7:34; Deut. 18:3). However, Eli's sons served God the way they chose (cf. Korah's behavior in Num. 32). The priests were to take what the offerers gave them, but Eli's sons took what they wanted from them (vv. 13-14). The priests were to burn the best part of the sacrifices on the altar as offerings to God, but Eli's sons took the best part for themselves (vv. 15-16). Meat was luxurious food in Israel's economy, so Eli's sons were living off the fat of the land. Thus they were worthless men (v. 12, i.e., wicked in God's sight; cf. 1:16).

"To this day, arrogant assertiveness and self-seeking are temptations to all those in positions of great power in society."³²

"Their sin was particularly egregious since they were supposed to be teaching morality and representing the people of God (2:22-25; cf. 2 Chron. 17:7-9)."³³

2. Hannah's godly influence on Samuel and its effect 2:18-21

In the previous paragraphs two statements about the main characters described them and framed the paragraph: they did not regard the Lord, and they despised the Lord's offerings (vv. 12, 17). Likewise in this one the writer described Samuel as "before the Lord" at the beginning and at the end (vv. 18, 21). Even though he was very young and

³¹Robert P. Gordon, *I & II Samuel: A Commentary*, p. 81.

³²Payne, p. 18.

³³Heater, p. 120.

his service was probably menial at this time (cf. 3:15), Samuel lived sensitively before God. The writer did not stress this sensitive spirit here; he only hinted at it. However it comes out clearly later (e.g., ch. 4).

In the central part of this section (vv. 18-19) the writer documented the support and encouragement to serve the Lord that Samuel received from his parents. The linen ephod was a priestly garment as was the robe (cf. Exod. 28:31; 2 Sam. 6:16).³⁴ Hannah's dressing Samuel as a little priest shows that she respected this office and wanted her son to grow up valuing it.³⁵

Hannah's obedience resulted in God blessing Elkanah and Hannah even more (vv. 20-21). Among other blessings, God gave Hannah five additional children by overcoming her barrenness and making her fertile (cf. Exod. 1:21; Ps. 127:3). Furthermore Samuel continued to develop in a promising manner (cf. Luke 2:40, 52).

3. Eli's lack of influence on his sons and its effect 2:22-26

The sons of Eli followed the example of Canaanite worship rather than the instruction of the Mosaic Law. Ritual prostitution was part of Canaanite worship, and Eli's sons seem to have adopted this custom. Even when their father confronted them with their sin Eli's sons refused to repent. Frequently old men demonstrate wisdom, but Eli was not wise enough to restrain the sinful behavior of his sons.

The women referred to were evidently volunteer helpers in the service of the sanctuary (cf. Exod. 38:8). Unintentional sin was pardonable under Mosaic law, but highhanded deliberately rebellious sin was not, particularly ritual prostitution (cf. Num. 25:1-5; Deut. 23:17; Amos 2:7-8). The punishment for highhanded sin was death (Num. 15:30). God initially judged Eli's sons by giving them hard hearts as a result of their sin before He brought final destruction on them (cf. Exod. 7:3; Rom. 1:24).

Earlier in Israel's history another Phinehas, the godly son of another priest, Eleazar, had executed an Israelite named Zimri and a Moabite woman named Cozbi for practicing sexual immorality in the tabernacle (Num. 25). Now this Phinehas, a priest and the son of another priest, Eli, was practicing sexual immorality in the tabernacle. How far the priests had departed from the Lord during the approximately 300 years that separated these incidents!

While Eli's sons were growing in disfavor with the Lord and the Israelites (vv. 22-25), Samuel was growing in favor with both (v. 26; cf. Luke 2:52) because he was obeying God.

³⁴N. L. Tidwell, "The Linen Ephod: 1 Sam. II 18 and 2 Sam. VI 14," *Vetus Testamentum* 24:4 (October 1974):505-7.

³⁵Similarly today sometimes parents buy things for their children that will give them a love for those things and encourage them to pursue interest in them (e.g., a football, a child's cooking set, etc.).

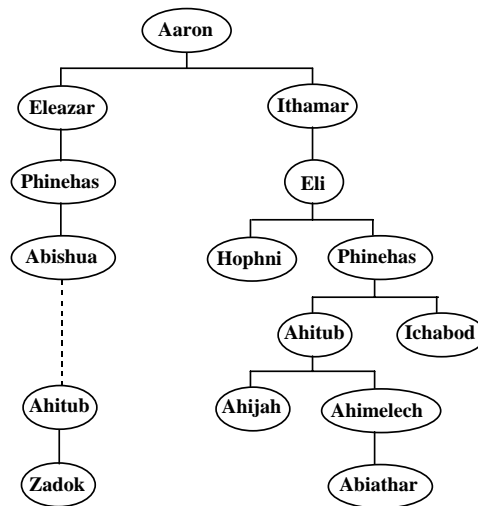
4. The oracle against Eli's house 2:27-36

The rest of the chapter explains why God would put Eli's sons to death (v. 25). The specific criticism that the man of God (a prophet, cf. 9:9-10) directed against Eli and his sons was two-fold. They had not appreciated God's grace extended to them in the Exodus deliverance nor the opportunity to serve Him as priests (vv. 27-29). "Kick at" (NASB, v. 29; cf. Deut. 32:15) means to "scorn" (NIV, Heb. *ba'at*). It is a serious matter to undervalue the grace of God. God had initiated blessing, but they had not responded appropriately, namely, with gratitude, trust, and obedience. Eli's guilt (v. 29) lay in his failure to rebuke his sons severely for their sin (3:13) though he did warn them of God's judgment (2:25). He also enjoyed the fruits of their disobedient worship (2:13-16). Had Eli grown fat from eating the best portions that his sons extorted from the people (cf. 4:18)?

Many students of this book have identified verse 30 as its key verse because it articulates the principle that the books of Samuel illustrate. Every section of 1 and 2 Samuel demonstrates the truth of this statement.

God's judgment on Eli and his sons was that He would dishonor them. God had promised that Levi's descendants would serve Him forever as priests, namely, as long as Israel existed as a nation (Exod. 29:9; Num. 25:13). Now God revealed that He would cut off Eli's branch of the Levitical family tree. Eli was a descendant of Levi through Levi's son Ithamar. His descendants ceased to function as priests when Solomon dismissed Abiathar as high priest. Abiathar escaped the slaughter of the priests at Nob (22:17-20), but Solomon defrocked him because he supported Adonijah (1 Kings 2:27, 35).

THE ANCESTORS OF ABIATHAR AND ZADOK



The faithful priest God promised to raise up (v. 35) was initially Samuel (3:1, 20; 7:9; 9:2-13). Zadok, a descendant of Levi's son Eleazar, replaced Abiathar as high priest in Solomon's day (1 Kings 2:35).³⁶ The Lord's anointed (v. 35) was the king of Israel. One of his descendants would be Messiah. Ezekiel 44:15 and 48:11 refer to the continuing ministry of Zadok's descendants when Messiah reigns in His future millennial kingdom.³⁷ Verse 36 evidently continues to describe the fate of Eli's descendants after God deposed Abiathar.³⁸

³⁶Segal, p. 40; et al.

³⁷See Ronald L. Rushing, "Phinehas' Covenant of Peace," Th.D. dissertation, Dallas Theological Seminary, 1988.

³⁸For another study of verses 27-36, see Tsevat, "Studies in the Book of Samuel," *Hebrew Union College Annual* 32 (1961):191-216.

Notice the chiasmic (crossing) structure of chapter 2 focusing on Eli's blessing of Samuel's parents.

- "A. The song of Hannah, concluding with reference to the Lord's anointed (2:1-10)
- B. Samuel ministers before the Lord (2:11)
- C. The sins of Eli's sons (2:12-17)
- D. Samuel ministers before the Lord (2:18-19)
- E. Eli blesses Samuel's parents (2:20-21a)
- D.' Samuel grows in the Lord's presence (2:21b)
- C.' The sins of Eli's sons (2:22-25)
- B.' Samuel grows in the Lords' presence (2:26)
- A.' The oracles of the man of God, concluding with reference to the Lord's anointed (2:27-36)"³⁹

This section reveals the importance and power of parental influence. Eli had placed more importance on his sons' personal preferences than he had on God's preferences; he had honored them more than Him (v. 29). Consequently they became worthless men (v. 12) whom God finally killed prematurely. Hannah, on the other hand, encouraged her son, Samuel, to value the service of God. Consequently he developed into a godly man whom God and other people honored and respected (v. 26). Eli's sons despised God and abused other people (vv. 17, 22). Samuel feared God and became a great blessing to other people.

This chapter also shows that godly influence can be more powerful than ungodly influence and can overcome many natural obstacles. God enabled Hannah to influence Samuel for good even though she seldom saw him, lived miles from him, and could not prevent the daily wicked influence of Eli's sons over him. Her previous dedication of him to the Lord was undoubtedly a factor in her success. Her continuing encouragement to serve God and her prayers for Samuel were other important factors.

God has not blessed with godly offspring all parents who have had the same desires for their children as Hannah did. Children are responsible for their own decisions as they grow up (Ezek. 18:4, 20). Some choose to turn away from the Lord. Nevertheless this story shows what *can* happen. Children can grow up in an ungodly environment away from their parents' personal supervision and still become godly. The influence of a wise and godly parent can overcome many other ungodly influences in a child's life.

C. GOD'S FIRST REVELATION TO SAMUEL CH. 3

This chapter records how God's blessing of and through Samuel continued and grew as a result of his faithful commitment to God. This is a revelation of another call to ministry

³⁹Youngblood, p. 588.

that God extended to His servants the prophets (cf. Exod. 3; Isa. 6; Jer. 1; et al.).⁴⁰ It is also another instance in which God revealed Himself to someone audibly in a dream.⁴¹

1. Samuel's call 3:1-18

The Hebrew word used to describe Samuel in verse 1 (*naar*) elsewhere refers to a young teenager (cf. 17:33). Consequently we should probably think of a boy in his early teens as we read this section. At this time in Israel's history (i.e., the late judges period), special revelations from God were rare. These normally came to the prophets in visions or dreams (cf. Num. 12:6; 1 Sam. 28:6). Samuel, who saw clearly both physically and spiritually, contrasts with Eli who could not see well either way (v. 2, cf. vv. 5, 6; 4:15).

The lamp of God (v. 3) is an expression that refers to the lamps on the sanctuary lampstand that continued to give light into the night until they ran out of oil in the morning (cf. Exod. 27:20-21; 30:8; Lev. 24:2-4; 2 Chron. 13:11). Samuel was probably sleeping in the holy place of the sanctuary. Eli evidently slept nearby (v. 5). Samuel's self-discipline in getting up three times in response to what he thought was Eli's call was commendable. His selfless willing obedience qualified him to receive the ministry that God entrusted to him (cf. Gen. 22:1, 11; Exod. 3:4; Isa. 6:8).

Verse 7 does not mean Samuel did not then know the Lord personally, that he was an unbeliever.⁴² Rather it means that the boy had not yet come to know God as he was about to know Him having heard His voice speaking directly to him. Even though Samuel knew God and His will, God had not previously communicated with him directly. Finally God not only called to Samuel but also stood by him (v. 10, cf. Gen. 18:22) suggesting that Samuel could see Him (i.e., a theophany). The Lord's repetition of Samuel's name added a note of urgency (cf. Gen. 22:11; Exod. 3:4; Acts 9:4).

In verses 11-14 God restated for Samuel what the prophet had told Eli concerning the fate of Eli's house in the near and far future (2:27-36). The reference to people's ears tingling occurs only here at the beginning of the monarchy and at its end in the Old Testament (2 Kings 21:12; Jer. 19:3). Under the Mosaic Law the penalty for showing contempt for the priesthood, for disobeying parents, and for blasphemy was death (Deut. 17:12; 21:18-21; Lev. 24:11-16, 23). This would be what Hophni and Phinehas would experience (cf. 4:11). The cutting off of Eli's line happened about 130 years later (cf. 1 Kings 2:27, 35).

The writer may have intended to mark the beginning of Samuel's ministry with his statement that the lad opened the doors of the Lord's house (v. 15; cf. 1:28b).⁴³

⁴⁰See John E. Johnson, "The Old Testament Offices as Paradigm for Pastoral Identity," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 152:606 (April-June 1995):182-200.

⁴¹See Robert K. Gnuse, *The Dream Theophany of Samuel: Its Structure in Relation to Ancient Near Eastern Dreams and Its Theological Significance*.

⁴²Zane C. Hodges, "The Salvation of Samuel," *Grace Evangelical Society News* 9:3 (May-June 1994):1, 3-4, took terms such as "knew the Lord" and "did not know the Lord" as evidence of salvation or lack of it (cf. Jer. 31:34; John 17:3). However this may be reading too much into the text.

⁴³See J. Gerald Janzen, "'Samuel Opened the Doors of the House of Yahweh' (1 Samuel 3.15)," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 26 (June 1983):89-96.

Eli realized that God's words to Samuel would have been very significant. He therefore insisted that the lad tell him what God had said. Samuel faithfully reported to Eli all that God had revealed to him (v. 18). He was a faithful prophet from the start. This was the second time Eli had received a prophecy of his family's future (cf. 2:27-36). Thus he knew that the prediction would surely come to pass. He accepted God's will submissively (v. 18).

2. Samuel's ministry 3:19—4:1a

These verses summarize Samuel's continuing ministry as a prophet in Israel. Samuel qualified for this privilege by his faithful obedience to God's will as he knew it. God sovereignly chose Samuel for this ministry, but his disobedience could have disqualified him as the disobedience of Eli and his sons disqualified them.

The phrase "let none of his words fail [lit. fall to the ground]" is a metaphor taken from archery (cf. Josh. 21:45; 23:14; 1 Kings 8:56). The arrow that falls to the ground fails to reach its target. In contrast, all of Samuel's words hit their mark. They were effective because God found him to be a reliable bow.⁴⁴

The phrase "from Dan to Beersheba" became proverbial during the united monarchy for all the land of Israel (cf. Judg. 20:1; 2 Sam 3:10; 17:11; 24:2, 15; 1 Kings 4:25). Dan on the northern border lay about 150 miles from Israel's southernmost major town, Beersheba.

The Lord's word (v. 21) is what Samuel communicated to the people as His prophet. He did this so consistently that Samuel's word amounted to the Lord's word (4:1a; cf. Jer. 1:2, 4, 11, 13; Hos. 1:1; Mic. 1:1).

Moses called Abraham (Gen. 20:7), Aaron (Exod. 7:1), and himself (Deut. 34:10) prophets. Samuel became a prophet in a new sense. He was the first of those "servants of the Lord" who became primarily, not secondarily as had the former prophets, God's mouthpieces. Samuel also established a company or school of prophets that he trained to serve God in this capacity. He did not, of course, train these men to get revelations from God. God gave new revelations sovereignly. He probably did, however, train his students in the general functions of the prophets that included knowing God's Word and communicating it effectively. Schools of the prophets continued through the tenth century B.C. (cf. 2 Kings 2:3). After that time, we have no record of their existence. Individual prophets ministered throughout the history of Israel though some generations saw none, others some, and others more prophets. The great writing prophets who have given us the prophetic books of the Old Testament began their ministry in the ninth century. There were no prophets who gave new revelation from God in Israel between Malachi and our Lord's days.

⁴⁴For further study of this verse, see W. T. Claassen, "1 Sam. 3:19 - A Case of Context and Semantics," *Journal of Northwest Semitic Languages* 8 (1980):1-9.

"It seems plausible . . . to attribute to Samuel the development of the prophetic movement in a formal sense. Certainly it was always God who raised up the true prophet, but the structure itself had its inception with Samuel and was developed further by Elijah."⁴⁵

The literary structure of chapter 3 focuses on the Lord's sentence of destruction on Eli's house. This was very significant for the whole nation of Israel.

- "A. Absence of divine oracles (3:1)
- B. Eli's fading powers (3:2)
- C. Three divine calls to Samuel (3:3-9)
- D. A divine oracle to Samuel (3:10-15)
- C'. Eli's request for Samuel's report (3:16-18)
- B'. Samuel's growing stature (3:19a)
- A'. Return of divine oracles (3:19b—4:1a)"⁴⁶

Another writer believed that the chiastic structure of chapter 3 focuses emphasis on Yahweh.

- "A1 Samuel's career in the shadow of Eli (v. 1)
- B1 Eli and Samuel in darkness (vv. 2-3)
- C1 Yahweh breaks through (vv. 4-10)
- C2 . . . and speaks (vv. 11-14)
- B2 Samuel and Eli in light (vv. 15-18)
- A2 Samuel's career as a prophet (vv. 19-21)"⁴⁷

This chapter also shows that God rewards faithful obedience to His word with further ministry opportunities. Samuel became the source of God's revelations to Israel. He continued to receive revelations from God and to represent God on earth because he remained faithful. He became the most powerful man in Israel even anointing the nation's first two kings. Like Moses, Samuel became an excellent leader of the Israelites. He functioned as judge, priest, and prophet. Yet he glorified the kings he appointed, who were the Lord's anointed, above himself.

Chapters 1 through 3 prepare us for the rest of 1 and 2 Samuel historically and theologically. They teach us that God responds to the faith of people, even insignificant people. A barren despised woman became the mother of Israel's most powerful man because she trusted and obeyed God. This was a complete reversal of what one would naturally expect. These chapters also show that God blesses with fertility those who commit to His revealed will contained in His law, but He cuts off those who do not.

"The birth of Samuel was God's means of dealing with His chosen people. The rest of the narrative deals with a similar theme. The righteous ones

⁴⁵Heater, pp. 129-30.

⁴⁶Youngblood, p. 592.

⁴⁷Donald Wiebe, "The Structure of 1 Sam. 3: Another View," *Biblische Zeitschrift* 30:12 (1986):256.

who are chosen by God will prosper while the ones who are chosen by the people and oppose God's rule will be cut off. This is true even if those who oppose God's rule (i.e., Eli and his sons) are a part of the covenant community."⁴⁸

Note that there are four conflicts and reversals of fortune in these chapters: Peninnah and Hannah (ch. 1), the arrogant and the innocent (2:1-10), Eli's sons and Samuel (2:11-36), and Eli's line of priests and Samuel's line of prophets (3:1—4:1a). God decides who will prosper and who will perish. The basis of His judgment is His faithfulness to what He has said He will do as people respond to His will (Deut. 28).

II. THE HISTORY OF THE ARK OF THE COVENANT 4:1B—7:1

Most serious students of 1 Samuel have noted the writer's emphasis on the ark of the covenant beginning here in the text. Critical scholars have long argued that 4:1b—7:1 and 2 Samuel 6 are the only remaining fragments of an older and longer ark narrative, which was a source document for the writer here.⁴⁹ More recently some scholars have come to believe that the old ark narratives were somewhat shorter. Conservative scholars generally believe that the ark narratives were not necessarily independent documents but may simply reflect the writer's particular emphasis on the ark here.⁵⁰

A. THE CAPTURE OF THE ARK 4:1B-22

A new subject comes to the forefront in this section and continues to be a significant motif throughout the rest of Samuel. It is the ark of the covenant. The writer drew attention to the ark in this chapter by mentioning it seven times including a notation at the end of each text section (vv. 4, 11, 17, 18, 19, 21, 22). Following the reference to Samuel the prophet in 4:1 the writer did not mention him again until 7:3.

⁴⁸John A. Martin, "Studies in 1 and 2 Samuel," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 141:561 (January-March 1984):32.

⁴⁹Of the 61 references to the ark in 1 and 2 Samuel, 36 appear in 1 Sam. 4:1b—7:2.

⁵⁰For a discussion of this rather technical subject, including a bibliography of books and articles dealing with it, see Youngblood, pp. 593-94.

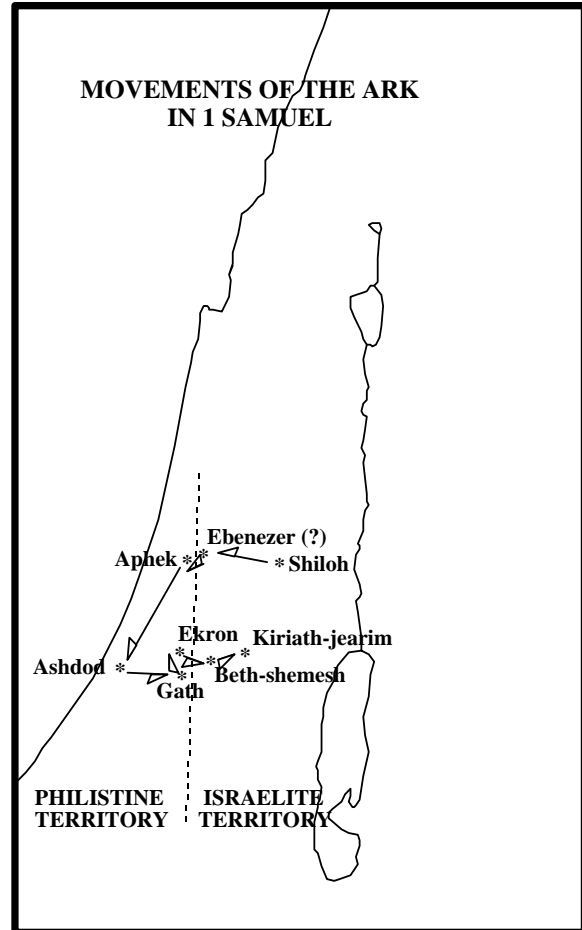
"The purpose of the story in 1 Sam. 4-6 of the ark's imprisonment in Philistia and its travels to different Philistine cities, as well as to Beth-Shemesh, is to give an historical background for the Philistines' rule over the whole country prior to the emergence of the Israelite state which could still accentuate Yahweh's supremacy as an unconquerable deity. The story explains how Yahweh finally became superior to his captors."⁵¹

The major historical element of continuity in this section is the fate of Eli's sons (4:9-11). The theological theme of fertility continues to be the primary unifying factor in the narrative.

1. The battle of Aphek **4:1b-11**

The Philistines, as we have already seen in Judges, were Israel's primary enemy to the west at this time. Samson, too, fought the Philistines (Judg. 13—16).⁵² There are about 150 references to the Philistines in 1 and 2 Samuel. They originally migrated from Greece primarily by way of Crete (Caphtor, cf. Gen. 10:14; Jer. 47:4; Amos 9:7). Their major influx into Canaan occurred about 1200 B.C., about 100 years before the events recorded in this chapter. However there were some Philistines in Canaan as early as Abraham's day (Gen. 21:32; et al.).⁵³

The town of Aphek (cf. 29:1; New Testament Antipatris, Acts 23:31) lay on the border between Philistine and Israelite territory. It was about 11 miles east and a little north of Joppa (and modern Tel Aviv). Archaeologists have not yet located Ebenezer, but it was obviously close to Aphek and on Israel's side of the border.⁵⁴



⁵¹G. W. Ahlstrom, "The Travels of the Ark: A Religio-Political Composition," *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 43 (1984):143. See also Antony F. Campbell, "Yahweh and the Ark: A Case Study in Narrative," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 98:1 (1979):31-43.

⁵²For a good brief history of the Philistines, see Edward Hindson, *The Philistines and the Old Testament*.

⁵³For further study, see Trude Dothan, *The Philistines and Their Material Culture*, especially pp. 13-16, 21-24, 289-96.

⁵⁴Moshe Kochavi and Aaron Demsky, "An Israelite Village from the Days of the Judges," *Biblical Archaeology Review* 4:3 (1978):19-21, believed it was the modern Izbet Sarteh about two miles east of Aphek on the road to Shiloh.

In the first encounter with the Philistines the enemy slew 4,000 Israelite soldiers (v. 2), and in the second 30,000 Israelites fell (v. 10). Between these two encounters the Israelites sent to Shiloh for the ark. The ark had always been the place where God dwelt in a special way among the Israelites. It contained the tablets of the Decalogue and the mercy seat where the high priest atoned for the sins of the nation. It was for these reasons a symbol of God and His presence. During the long period of the judges the Israelites as a whole had adopted an increasingly pagan attitude toward Yahweh. They felt that they could satisfy Him with simply formal worship and that they could secure His help with offerings rather than humility. They were treating the ark the same way they treated God. They believed the ark's presence among them in battle would insure victory.

"We eventually all learn what Israel discovered in battle against the Philistines. Having the paraphernalia of God and having God are not the same."⁵⁵

The paraphernalia that modern believers sometimes rely on in place of God include a crucifix, a picture of Jesus, or a family Bible positioned conspicuously on the coffee table but seldom read. Others base their hope of spiritual success on a spiritually strong spouse, regular church attendance, or even the daily reading of the Bible. These things are no substitute for a vital personal relationship with God.

Perhaps the elders of Israel remembered that in Joshua's conquest of Jericho the ark played a very important and visible part in the victory (Josh. 6:2-20). Nevertheless then the people trusted in Yahweh, not in the ark as a talisman. The custom of taking idols into battle so their gods would deliver them was common among ancient warriors (cf. 2 Sam. 5:21; 1 Chron. 14:12). Obviously the Israelites were wrong in thinking that the presence of the ark would guarantee success.

"The offenses against the ark as pledge of Yahweh's presence appear to be mainly of two kinds: (1) a misplaced reliance on the ark, and (2) an irreverent disregard for the ark."⁵⁶

The Hebrew word *elep*, translated thousand (v. 2), can also mean military unit. Military units were of varying sizes but considerably smaller than 1,000 soldiers.⁵⁷

Ancient Near Eastern artists sometimes pictured a king sitting on a throne supported on either side by a cherub, which the artist represented as a winged lion (sphinx) with a human head.⁵⁸ This may have been the image of the Lord of hosts (armies) "who sits above the cherubim" that the writer had in mind here (v. 4).

⁵⁵Kenneth L. Chafin, *1, 2 Samuel*, p. 54.

⁵⁶Marten H. Woudstra, *The Ark of the Covenant from the Conquest to Kingship*, p. 55.

⁵⁷For more information concerning the problem of large numbers in the Old Testament, see R. E. D. Clark, "The Large Numbers of the Old Testament," *Journal of Transactions of the Victoria Institute* 87 (1955):82-92; and J. W. Wenham, "Large Numbers in the Old Testament," *Tyndale Bulletin* 18 (1967):19-53.

⁵⁸W. F. Albright, "What Were the Cherubim?" *Biblical Archaeologist* 1:1 (1938):1-3.

The fact that the people shouted loudly when the ark arrived at Ebenezer from Shiloh (v. 5) may be another indication that they were hoping to duplicate the victory at Jericho (cf. Josh. 6:20). Likewise the response of the Philistines when they heard the cry recalls Rahab's revelation of how the Canaanites feared Yahweh (Josh 2:9-11). These allusions to the victory at Jericho contrast the Israelites' present attitude toward God with what it had been at that earlier battle.

The fact that the Israelites suffered a devastating slaughter (Heb. *makkah*, v. 10), many times worse than their earlier recent defeat (v. 2), proved that victory did not come from the ark but from the Lord. Defeat was due to sin in the camp, specifically Hophni and Phinehas' sin (cf. 2:25). Israel had suffered defeat at Ai about 300 years earlier for the same reason: sin among the people (Josh. 7:11). Trying to duplicate previous spiritual victories by going through the same procedures is no substitute for getting right with God (cf. Judg. 16:20; Matt. 23:25).

God did not record the destruction of the tabernacle at Shiloh, but some writers assume the Philistines razed it after they captured the ark.⁵⁹ However, the writer of Chronicles mentioned that it still stood in David's day (1 Chron. 21:29) and when Solomon began to reign (2 Chron. 1:3). The writer of Samuel showed less interest in the sanctuary structure than in the ark. The Philistines may have destroyed the town of Shiloh, but it "revived sufficiently to produce a few worthy citizens in later generations (cf. 1 Ki. 11:29; Je. 41:5)."⁶⁰

| THE TWO TABERNACLES AND THE ARK | | |
|---|--|-------------------------------|
| Moses' Tabernacle at: | The Ark at: | David's Tabernacle at: |
| <p>Gilgal (Josh 5:10; 10:15, 43) Shiloh (Josh. 18:1, 9-10) Bethel (Judg. 20:18-28; 21:1-4) Shiloh (1 Sam. 1:3)</p> | <p>Gilgal (Josh. 6:12) Shiloh (Josh. 18:10) Bethel (Judg. 20:27) Shiloh (1 Sam. 4:3) Ebenezer (1 Sam. 4:4-5) Ashdod (1 Sam. 5:1) Gath (1 Sam. 5:8) Ekron (1 Sam. 5:10) Bethshemesh (1 Sam. 6:12-14)</p> | |

⁵⁹Joyce Baldwin, *1 & 2 Samuel*, p. 71; Charles Pfeiffer and Howard Vos, *The Wycliffe Historical Geography of Bible Lands*, p. 143. The town probably did suffer destruction then (cf. Jer. 7:12, 14; 26:6).

⁶⁰Gordon, p. 96.

| THE TWO TABERNACLES AND THE ARK | | |
|--|---|---|
| Moses' Tabernacle at: | The Ark at: | David's Tabernacle at: |
| <p>Mizpah (1 Sam. 7:9-10) Gilgal (1 Sam. 10:8; 13:8-10; 15:10-15) Nob (1 Sam. 17:54; 21:1-9) Gibeon (1 Chron. 16:39-40; 21:29; 1 Kings 3:4; 2 Chron. 1:3)</p> | <p>Kiriath-jearim (1 Sam. 7:1)</p> <p>Perez-uzzah (2 Sam. 6:2-11; 1 Chron. 13:5-14)</p> <p>Jerusalem (2 Sam. 6:12-17; 1 Chron. 15:2—16:6, 37-38)</p> | <p>Jerusalem (1 Chron. 15:1)</p> |

2. The response of Eli 4:12-18

The deaths of Hophni and Phinehas, who accompanied the soldiers into battle, were the sign God promised Eli that He would remove the priestly privilege from Eli's descendants eventually (2:34). The writer carefully recorded that it was the news that the Philistines had captured the ark, not that his two sons had died, that shocked Eli and caused him to die (v. 18).

There is a word play in the Hebrew text that helps us understand the significance of the departure of God's glory. The Hebrew word for "heavy" (v. 18) is *kabed*, and the word for "glory" (v. 21) is *kabod*. Rather than Israel enjoying glory from God's presence through Eli's priesthood, Eli himself had received the glory as his heavy weight evidenced. Eli's self-indulgence was responsible for the departure of God's glory from Israel and from his line of priests.⁶¹

The battle of Aphek recorded in this chapter took place in 1104 B.C. Since Eli was 98 years old when he died on hearing the news that the Philistines had taken the ark in this battle, he must have been born in 1202 B.C.⁶²

⁶¹See John H. Sailhamer, *The Pentateuch as Narrative*, p. 400-401.

⁶²See the "Chronology of 1 and 2 Samuel" earlier in these notes.

3. The response of Phinehas' wife 4:19-22

Likewise the news of the loss of the ark is what distressed Phinehas' wife more than the news of the deaths of her husband, father-in-law, and brother-in-law (vv. 21-22).

"With the surrender of the earthly throne of His glory, the Lord appeared to have abolished His covenant of grace with Israel; for the ark, with the tables of the law and the capporeth [mercy seat], was the visible pledge of the covenant of grace which Jehovah had made with Israel."⁶³

Her words may also reflect a pagan viewpoint to some extent, that because the Philistines had stolen what represented Yahweh the Lord Himself had abandoned the nation. In view of God's promises and revealed plans for Israel, she should have known that He had not abandoned His people (cf. Matt. 28:20). Furthermore the Israelites knew that the true God is omnipresent.

Most of the Israelites evidently thought that since Israel had lost the ark it had lost God.⁶⁴ However because the people had not lived in proper covenant relationship with Him Israel had only lost God's blessing. They were disregarding God's Law, so God's glory had departed from Israel (v. 22; cf. Exod. 19:5-6). His people could not enjoy fertility.

Someone has said that if you feel far from God, you need to remember that He is not the one who moved. God has promised that if His people will draw near to Him He will draw near to them (2 Chron. 7:14; James 4:8; Heb. 10:22).

B. PAGAN FERTILITY FOILED BY GOD CH. 5

The primary purpose of this chapter, I believe, is to demonstrate the superiority of Yahweh over Dagon, the fertility god of the Philistines.⁶⁵

5:1-5 Having captured the ark the Philistines brought it from Ebenezer to their main city, Ashdod, which stood about 30 miles to the southwest and three miles from the Mediterranean coast. Archaeologists have excavated Ashdod more extensively than any of the other four major Philistine cities.

Dagon was the principle deity of the Philistines. The popular teaching that the Philistines pictured him as being part man and part fish rests on verse 4. *Dag* in Hebrew means fishy part. Dagon (cf. Heb. *dagan*, grain) was a grain god whom the Philistines worshipped as the source of bountiful

⁶³C. F. Keil and Franz Delitzsch, *Biblical Commentary on the Books of Samuel*, pp. 56-57.

⁶⁴For a further discussion of the role of the ark at this time in Israel's history and how Samuel's ministry related to it, see Clive Thomson, "Samuel, the Ark, and the Priesthood," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 118:417 (July-September 1961):259-63. For a more critical study of the ark, see P. R. Davies, "The History of the Ark in the Books of Samuel," *Journal of Northwest Semitic Languages* 5 (1977):9-18.

⁶⁵There are several similarities between this chapter and the record of God sending plagues on the Egyptians (Exod. 7—12).

harvests (fertility). Worship of him began about 2500 B.C. in Mesopotamia, especially in the Middle-Euphrates region.⁶⁶

The writer clarified that the Philistines regarded the fact that the image representing Dagon had fallen on its face before the ark as indicating Yahweh's superiority. Falling on one's face was a posture associated with worship. The fact that the Philistines had to reposition the idol is another allusion to Dagon's inferiority. He could not act on his own (cf. Isa. 46:7). Later Goliath, the Philistine champion, would also fall on his face before David, Yahweh's champion (17:49).

The following night the symbol of Dagon toppled again before the ark, the symbol of Yahweh. This time Dagon's head, symbolic of his sovereign control, and his palms, symbolic of his power, broke off (v. 4). In the ancient Near East, warring armies cut off and collected the heads and hands of their enemies to count accurately the number of their slain (cf. 29:4; Judg. 8:6).⁶⁷ Earlier Samson's defeat had involved the cutting of the hair of his head and the weakening of his hands (Judg. 16:21-30). Later David would cut off Goliath's head (17:51), and the Philistines would cut off King Saul's head (1 Chron. 10:10).

The breaking of Dagon's head and hands on the threshold of his temple rendered the threshold specially sacred. From then on the pagan priests superstitiously regarded the threshold as holy (cf. Zeph. 1:4).⁶⁸ This is another ironical testimony to the utter folly of idolatry and to Yahweh's sovereignty (cf. Exod. 20:3).

5:6-12

The writer now began to stress the major theme in the ark narrative: the hand of the Lord.⁶⁹ There are nine occurrences of this phrase in this section of 1 Samuel (4:8; 5:6, 7, 9, 11; 6:3, 5, 9; 7:13). The hand of the Lord represents Yahweh in action (cf. Exod. 9:3; Jer. 21:5-6). In the biblical world, people spoke of sickness and death as the bad effects of the "hand" of some god.⁷⁰ This was the conclusion of Ashdod's leaders who attributed their recent calamities to Yahweh (v. 7). God afflicted the Philistines with tumors, a swelling caused by new tissue growth.

Evidently the men of Ashdod believed that it was particularly with their city that Yahweh felt displeasure. So they moved the ark to Gath, which was about 12 miles southeast of Ashdod. Dagon could not prevent the

⁶⁶*New Bible Dictionary*, s.v. "Dagon," by Kenneth A. Kitchen.

⁶⁷Antony F. Campbell, *The Ark Narrative*, p. 86, n. 1.

⁶⁸The ancients commonly treated sanctuary thresholds with respect because they marked the boundary that divided the sacred from the profane (Gordon, p. 99). This incident involving Dagon made the threshold to his sanctuary even more sacred.

⁶⁹Patrick D. Miller Jr., and J. J. M. Roberts, *The Hand of the Lord: A Reassessment of the "Ark Narrative" of 1 Samuel*, p. 48.

⁷⁰See J. J. M. Roberts, "The Hand of Yahweh," *Vetus Testamentum* 21:2 (1971):244-51.

tumors (lit. buboes) and death with which Yahweh afflicted the Philistines (vv. 6, 9-12). The people of Ashdod should have turned from worshipping Dagon and put their trust in Yahweh. Death followed because they chose to continue in unbelief in spite of their confession of Yahweh's superiority (v. 7).

The Hebrew word translated "broke out" occurs only here in the Old Testament (v. 9). The Septuagint translators interpreted it accurately as "groin." These tumors were apparently most prominent in the groin area hence the translation "hemorrhoids." Tumors in the groin are a symptom of bubonic plague. Since the Philistines associated mice with this plague (6:4-5), and mice carry bubonic plague, it seems clear that the hand of Yahweh sent this particular affliction on them.

Ekron stood about 6 miles north of Gath.⁷¹ The reputation of the ark preceded it to that town, and its residents did not welcome it as a trophy of war. They saw it instead as a divine instrument of death (cf. Exod. 2:23; 11:6; 12:30). The Philistines repeatedly acknowledged Yahweh's superior power over themselves and Dagon (vv. 7-12; cf. 2:6, 25; Exod. 10:7; 12:31-33). This is another testimony to Yahweh's sovereignty in the narrative. The cry that went up to heaven from Philistia (v. 12) recalls the cry that went up to heaven earlier from Egypt when God afflicted that enemy (Exod. 12:30; cf. 1 Sam. 4:8). Through the seven months that the ark was in Philistia (6:1), the Philistines learned what the Israelites had not: Yahweh is the sovereign God. Yet they refused to bow before Him and so experienced death, though the Lord mixed mercy with judgment and did not kill all the Philistines (v. 12).

Chapters 4 and 5 both testify to God's sovereignty. Neither Israel, in chapter 4, nor the Philistines, in chapter 5, could control or resist His will. We cannot manipulate God. We must follow Him rather than expecting Him to follow us. Had the Israelites learned this lesson they probably would not have demanded a king like the other nations (8:5) but waited for Him to provide His choice for them.

C. THE ARK RETURNED TO ISRAEL BY GOD 6:1—7:1

The writer added further evidence of the Philistines' reverence for Yahweh and the Israelites' spiritual blindness in this section.

1. The plan to terminate God's judgment 6:1-9

The Philistines acknowledged Yahweh's superiority over Dagon, but they believed they could manipulate Him (v. 3). Guilt offerings were common in ancient Near Eastern religions.

⁷¹See Trude Dothan, "Ekron of the Philistines. Part I: Where They Came From, How They Settled Down, and the Place They Worshipped In," *Biblical Archaeology Review* 16:1 (1990):26-36.

"Ancient religious protocol mandated that the worshiper not approach his god(s) empty-handed (cf. Exod 23:15; Deut 16:16)."⁷²

Evidently the reason the Philistines fashioned images of mice (v. 4) was there was some connection between rodents and the swellings the Philistines suffered.⁷³ This connection has led many interpreters to conclude that perhaps the Philistines had experienced something such as bubonic plague, which fleas living on rodents transmit. Bubonic plague causes swollen buboes or tumors.⁷⁴ Probably the Philistines intended that the models would trigger sympathetic magic. By sending the models out of their country they hoped the tumors and mice would depart too.

Yahweh had reduced the fertility of the crops of the Philistines as well as afflicting the people and their gods (v. 5). The Philistines remembered that this is what Yahweh had done to the Egyptians earlier (v. 6). The priests counselled the people not to harden their hearts as Pharaoh had done. Hardening the heart only brings divine retribution (cf. Josh. 7:19).

Milch cows (vv. 7, 10) are cows that are still nursing their calves. It would be very unusual for nursing cows to leave their young and head for a town some 10 miles away. Indeed the Philistines regarded this behavior as miraculous and indicative that Yahweh had been punishing them.

2. The return of the ark to Bethshemesh 6:10-18

Bethshemesh was the closest Israelite town to Ekron. It stood about 12 miles east-southeast of Ekron. To get there the cows walked east up the Sorek Valley, Samson's home area. Evidently the Israelites who were reaping their wheat harvest (in June) when the ark appeared remembered that only Levites were to handle the ark (Num. 4:15-20; v. 15). Bethshemesh was a Levitical town (Josh 21:13-16; 1 Chron. 6:57-59), so Levites would have been nearby. Even though the ark had been absent from Israel for seven months God had not removed His blessing of fertile crops from His chosen people during that time. This indicates His grace.

3. The removal of the ark to Kiriath-jearim 6:19—7:1

Not all the people who later assembled to see the ark were as careful as those from Bethshemesh, however. The Mosaic Law specified that no one was to look into the ark or that person would die (Num. 4:5, 20; cf. 2 Sam. 6:6-7). The number of the slain (50,070, v. 19) may represent an error a scribe made as he copied the text.⁷⁵ Several Hebrew

⁷²Youngblood, p. 604.

⁷³John B. Geyer, "Mice and Rites in 1 Samuel V-VI," *Vetus Testamentum* 31:3 (July 1981):293-304.

⁷⁴See Nicole Duplaix, "Fleas: The Lethal Leapers," *National Geographic* 173:5 (May 1988):672-94, for more information on bubonic plague. The diagnosis of Flavius Josephus, *Antiquities of the Jews*, 6:1:1, was dysentery.

⁷⁵See John Davis, *Biblical Numerology*, pp. 87-89.

manuscripts omit 50,000, and Josephus mentioned only 70 fatalities.⁷⁶ Perhaps 70 men died as the NIV states.

"The basic point at issue in this verse is that God will brook no irregularity in his people's treatment of the sacred ark (cf. 2 Sa. 6:6f.).⁷⁷

"The power of God was not something that Israel somehow tamed and confined in a box, any more than modern man can banish God to the churches, chapels and cathedrals they take care never to frequent."⁷⁸

Why did God strike dead some Israelites who touched the ark inappropriately (v. 19; 1 Chron. 13:10; cf. Lev. 10:2) and not deal with the Philistines in the same way (4:17)? God was merciful to the Philistines. He will be gracious to whom He will be gracious, and He will show compassion on whom He will show compassion (Exod. 33:19). The reason for His patience with the Philistines was partially to teach the Israelites and the Philistines His omnipotence. Also the Israelites' greater knowledge of God's will placed them under greater responsibility to do His will.

The Israelites came to a fresh appreciation of Yahweh's holiness because these men died (v. 20). The last part of this verse indicates that they wished God would depart from them, because they were sinful and He was holy. Thus the capture of the ark resulted in the Philistines recognizing that Yahweh was the true source of fertility and blessing. The Israelites' also rededicated themselves to investigating and following the revealed will of God in the Mosaic Covenant.

Archaeologists believe they have located the remains of Kiriath-jearim about 10 miles east and a little north of Bethshemesh. Why did the Israelites not return the ark to the tabernacle at Shiloh? One possibility is that the Philistines had destroyed Shiloh (cf. Ps. 78:60; Jer. 7:12, 14; 26:6, 9). The ark did not reside in an appropriate place of honor until David brought it into his new capital, Jerusalem (2 Sam. 6). Kiriath-jearim was not a Levitical city nor is there any reason to believe Abinadab and Eleazar were priests or Levites. Perhaps the Israelites kept the ark there for convenience sake. It evidently remained there for many years (cf. 2 Sam. 6:2).⁷⁹

"The certainty of God's presence is always a sign of hope, however dark the circumstances may be."⁸⁰

This whole major section of 1 Samuel (4:1b—7:1) advances the fertility motif. Dagon, the chief god of Israel's chief rival, proved incapable of preventing Yahweh's curse from falling on the Philistines. Yahweh Himself appears as sovereign and all powerful.

⁷⁶Josephus, 6:1:4.

⁷⁷Gordon, p. 103.

⁷⁸Payne, p. 35.

⁷⁹For a study of the complex history of Kiriath-jearim, see Joseph Blenkinsopp, "Kiriath-jearim and the Ark," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 88 (1969):143-56. Baale-judah (2 Sam. 6:2) may be a later name for Kiriath-jearim (Youngblood, p. 868).

⁸⁰Payne, p. 37.

Whereas the ark was the symbol of God's presence it was not a talisman that would secure victory for its possessor. The Israelites' attitude reveals that they did not appreciate the importance of obeying the Mosaic Law. Some individuals probably perceived that God's presence was essential to Israel's blessing. Perhaps Eli and Phinehas' wife did. When God's presence was near again, there was rejoicing. In spite of Israel's unfaithfulness, God gave the nation some blessing and returned the ark to His people. He evidently did this so they would be able to rediscover the true nature of worship at a future time, namely, under David's leadership.

In this second major section of Samuel, as in the others, there are conflicts and reversals of fortune. These include Israel and the Philistines (4:1b-22), Dagon and the ark (5:1—6:9), and the people who did not rejoice and those who did (6:10-16).⁸¹

III. SAMUEL AND SAUL 7:2—15:35

A. SAMUEL'S MINISTRY AS ISRAEL'S JUDGE 7:2-17

As a totally dedicated Nazarite who followed the stipulations of the Mosaic Covenant as best he could, Samuel became a source of deliverance for Israel. The writer recorded two deliverances in this chapter.

This section sounds more like the Book of Judges than does any other in 1 or 2 Samuel. The cycle of religious experience repeated six times in that book occurs here as well. That cycle consists of blessing, apostasy, discipline, repentance, deliverance, rededication, and blessing. Samuel exercised the same function as the judges whose experiences appear on the pages of Judges.

"In the books of Samuel there are three chapters which stand out as markers, characterized by their interpretation of historical changes taking place in Israel's leadership structure. They are 1 Samuel 7, 1 Samuel 12 and 2 Samuel 7. Not that the remainder of these books is 'non-theological,' for theological presuppositions undergird the whole, but in these chapters a prophet expounds the divine word for each stage of the crisis through which the people of God are passing."⁸²

Note the continuation of the key word "hand" in this chapter (vv. 3, 8, 13, 14). It reflects the writer's continuing interest in the source of true power.

1. Samuel's spiritual leadership 7:2-4

Twenty years after the Philistines had taken the ark Samuel led the people in national repentance.⁸³ The Philistine oppression resulted in the Israelites turning to Yahweh for help (v. 2). Samuel told the people what they needed to do to secure God's blessing and

⁸¹Martin, p. 138.

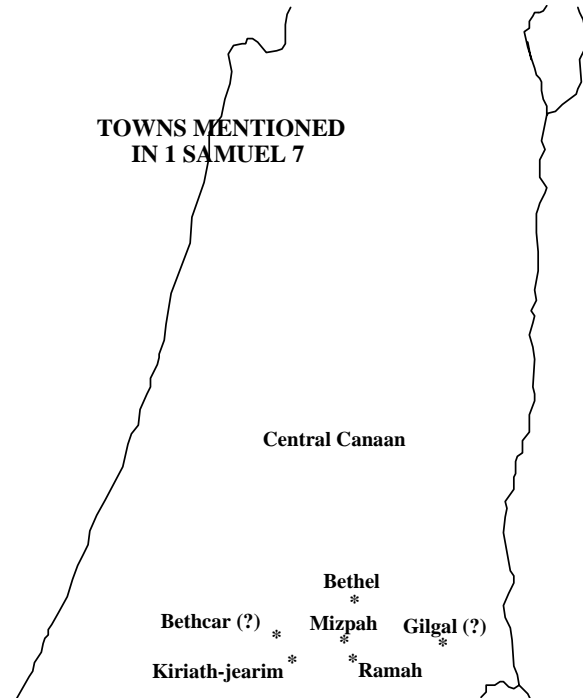
⁸²Baldwin, p. 33.

⁸³Ralph W. Klein, *1 Samuel*, pp. 65-66.

victory over their enemy. They needed to repent (cf. Deut. 6:13; 13:4; Matt. 4:10). The people did so, and the hope of deliverance revived. Baal and Ashtoreth were the chief male and female deities of the Canaanite pantheon.⁸⁴

2. National repentance and deliverance 7:5-14

Mizpah (lit. watchtower, signifying an elevated site) was about two miles northwest of Samuel's hometown, Ramah, on the central Benjamin plateau. Pouring out water symbolized the people's feeling of total inability to make an effective resistance against their enemy (cf. Ps. 62:8; et al.). The people showed that they felt a greater need to spend their time praying to strengthen themselves spiritually than eating to strengthen themselves physically. They did this by fasting (skipping a meal or meals).⁸⁵ They admitted that what they had been doing was a sin against God (cf. 1 John 1:9). The writer described Samuel as one of Israel's judges similar to Gideon, Samson, et al., at this time (cf. Judg. 6:25-27).



The Israelites sensed their continuing need for God's help and appealed to Samuel to continue to intercede for them (v. 8). Samuel gave intercession priority in his ministry because he realized how essential it was to Israel's welfare (cf. 12:23). All spiritual leaders should realize this need and should give prayer priority in their ministries. The sucking young lamb he sacrificed for the people represented the nation as it had recently begun to experience new life because of its repentance (v. 9).⁸⁶

After the tabernacle left Shiloh, the Israelites may have pitched it at Mizpah. Since Samuel offered a burnt offering there (v. 9) perhaps that is where the tabernacle stood. Nevertheless at this time the Israelites made offerings to God at other places too.

God's deliverance was apparently entirely supernatural (v. 10) probably to impress the people with His ability to save them in a hopeless condition and to strengthen their faith in Him. Baal was supposedly the god of storms, but Yahweh humiliated him here.⁸⁷ The

⁸⁴The plural forms of these names are Baals and Ashtaroth (v. 4).

⁸⁵On the practice of fasting, see Kent D. Berghuis, "A Biblical Perspective on Fasting," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 158:629 (January-March 2001):86-103.

⁸⁶The burnt offering was an offering of dedication, but it also served to make atonement (cf. 24:25; Lev. 1:4; Job 1:5; 42:8).

⁸⁷See Robert B. Chisholm Jr., "The Polemic against Baalism in Israel's Early History and Literature," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 151:603 (July-September 1994):277.

location of Bethcar is still uncertain, but most scholars believe it was near Lower Beth-horon, about 8 miles west of Mizpah toward the Philistine plain.

Scholars also dispute the site of Shen (v. 12). The Israelites memorialized God's help with a stone monument that they named Ebenezer. This Ebenezer is obviously not the same as the one the writer mentioned in 4:1 and 5:1. It was another memorial stone that marked God's action for His people (cf. Gen. 35:14; Josh. 4:9; 24:26).⁸⁸ It announced the reversal of previous indignities and was a symbol of reintegration.⁸⁹ This victory ended the 40-year oppression of the Philistines (1124-1084 B.C.; cf. Judg. 3:30; 8:28). However, the Philistines again became a problem for Israel later (cf. 9:16).

The memorial stone bore witness to the effectiveness of trusting the Lord and His designated judge. If the Lord had helped the people thus far, what need was there for a king? This incident shows that the people should have continued following the leadership of the judges that God had been raising up for them. This was not the right time for a king.

The concluding reference to peace with the Amorites may imply that this victory began a period of peace with the Amorites as well as with the Philistines. The Amorites had controlled the hill country of Canaan, and the Philistines had dominated the coastal plain. The native Canaanites, here referred to as Amorites, would have profited from Israel's superiority over the Philistines since the Philistines were more of a threat to the Canaanites than were the Israelites.⁹⁰

3. Samuel's regular ministry 7:15-17

In addition to providing the special leadership just described, Samuel's ministry as a judge in Israel included regular civil as well as spiritual leadership. He was active especially in the tribal territory of Benjamin and in the town of Bethel just north of Benjamin in Ephraim. Samuel covered a four-town circuit as preacher and judge. He was obviously similar to the other judges in the Book of Judges all of whom also served local regions primarily. It is not clear whether the Gilgal referred to here was the Gilgal in the Jordan Valley near Jericho, or whether it was another Gilgal located a few miles north of Bethel.⁹¹ The fact that Samuel built an altar (v. 17) illustrates his response to God's grace and his commitment to Yahweh.

"Brief as the portrait of Samuel here is, it gives us a glimpse of the ideal ruler. He had been provided by God and trained by him; he now showed himself able to read his people's minds and capable of rebuking them effectively. He was decisive in word and action, and he was fully in touch

⁸⁸See Carl F. Graesser, "Standing Stones in Ancient Palestine," *Biblical Archaeologist* 35:2 (1972):34-63.

⁸⁹Gordon, pp. 107-8.

⁹⁰Norman K. Gottwald, *The Tribes of Yahweh, a Sociology of the Religion of Liberated Israel, 1250-1050 B.C.E.*, p. 418.

⁹¹Keil and Delitzsch, p. 76, said it was the latter as did Marten H. Woudstra, *The Book of Joshua*, p. 95, but I have not been able to verify the existence of a Gilgal there.

with God. Nor is his concern to provide justice purely coincidental. Yet the irony was that such a ruler was precisely the man whom Israel rejected, as chapter 8 will show. Political unrest may mirror inadequate or oppressive leadership; on the other hand, it may well demonstrate the fatal flaws in human nature. exactly the same may be true of unrest within any human community, including a local congregation."⁹²

Samuel's personal faithfulness to God qualified him for spiritual leadership and resulted in God blessing Israel. He was God's man calling the people back to faithful obedience to His will so they could experience His blessing.

B. KINGSHIP GIVEN TO SAUL CHS. 8—12

"Clearly these five chapters constitute a literary unit, for they are immediately preceded by the formula that marks the end of the story of a judge (7:13-17) and immediately followed by the formula that marks the beginning of the account of a reign (13:1; . . .). The divisions of the unit . . . alternate between negative and positive attitudes toward monarchy (not as contradictory but as complementary): 8:1-22, negative; 9:1—10:16, positive; 10:17-27, negative; 11:1-11, positive; 11:12—12:25, negative . . ."⁹³

In this section and the next (chs. 13—15) the writer skillfully contrasted the blessing that comes as a result of obeying God's will with the cursing that comes from disobedience. Chapters 8—12 are generally positive and record Saul's successes. The section opens and closes with Samuel giving a warning to the Israelites.

1. The demand for a king ch. 8

The occasion for requesting a king 8:1-3

The people would probably not have pressed for a king at this time had Samuel's sons proved as faithful to the Mosaic Covenant as their father had been. However, Joel ("Yahweh is God") and Abijah ("My [divine] Father is Yahweh") disqualified themselves from leadership in Israel by disobeying the Law (Exod. 23:6, 8; Deut. 16:19). Eli's sons had done the same thing.

The reason for requesting a king 8:4-9

God had made provision for kings to rule His people in the Mosaic Law (Deut. 17:14-20; cf. Gen. 1:26-28; 17:6, 16; 35:11; 49:10). The request in itself was not what displeased Samuel and God. It was the reason they wanted a king that was bad. On the one hand it expressed dissatisfaction with God's present method of providing leadership through judges (v. 7). On the other it verbalized a desire to be "like all the nations" (v. 5). God's

⁹²Payne, p. 39.

⁹³Youngblood, p. 611.

purpose for Israel was that it be different from the nations, superior to them, and a lesson for them (Exod. 19:5-6). The Israelites had requested a different form of government during Gideon's judgeship (Judg. 8:22-23), so this was not the first time the people had voiced this desire. God saw this demand as one more instance of apostasy that had marked the Israelites since the Exodus. He acceded to their request as He had done many times before—by providing manna, quail, and water in the wilderness, for example. However, He mixed judgment with His grace.⁹⁴

"The rejection of Samuel was the rejection of godly leadership; the choice of Saul was the choice of ungodly leadership. In many ways Saul was the foil for the godly David, just as the sons of Eli were a foil for Samuel."⁹⁵

Samuel experienced rejection by the people he led just as Moses, Jesus Christ, and so many of God's faithful servants have throughout history (cf. Luke 19:14).⁹⁶

The consequences of requesting a king 8:10-22

Samuel explained what having a king similar to all the nations would mean. The elders were interested in the *functions* of monarchy, but Samuel pointed out the *nature* of monarchy. It meant the loss of freedoms and possessions that the people presently enjoyed. In verses 11-17 Samuel did not define the rights of a king but described the ways of most kings.⁹⁷ Note the recurrence of the words "take" and "best" in these verses.

"By nature royalty is parasitic rather than giving, and kings are never satisfied with the worst."⁹⁸

The people would also regret their request because their king would disappoint them (v. 18). God would not remove the consequences of their choice. Their king could have been a great joy to them instead of a great disappointment if the people had waited for God to initiate the monarchy. As becomes clear later in Samuel as well as in Kings and Chronicles, David was God's choice to lead the Israelites. If the people had not been impatient, I believe David would have been their first king. Saul proved to be a "false start" to the monarchy.⁹⁹

⁹⁴See J. Barton Payne, "Saul and the Changing Will of God," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 129:516 (October-December 1972):321-25; J. Carl Laney, *First and Second Samuel*, pp. 36-37; and Gordon, p. 109.

⁹⁵Heater, p. 139.

⁹⁶Scott L. Harris, "1 Samuel VIII 7-8," *Vetus Testamentum* 31:1 (January 1981):79-80, suggested that the end of verse 8 should read, ". . . so they are also making a king." Even though this translation minimizes what seems to some to be a contradiction between verses 7 and 8, it requires tampering with the text.

⁹⁷G. Coleman Luck, "Israel's Demand for a King," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 120:477 (January-March 1963):61. For evidence that Israel's neighbor nations really did suffer under their kings as Samuel warned, see I. Mendelsohn, "Samuel's Denunciation of Kingship in the Light of the Akkadian Documents from Ugarit," *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 143 (October 1956):17-22.

⁹⁸Youngblood, p. 614.

⁹⁹David Payne, p. 1.

In the argument of Samuel this chapter serves to introduce the reason Saul became such a disappointment to the Israelites and such a disaster as a king. Nevertheless his reign was not totally unsuccessful because at its beginning he sought to please Yahweh.

2. The anointing of Saul 9:1—10:16

In chapters 9—11 the writer painted Saul as the ideal man to serve as king from the human viewpoint. This pericope (9:1—10:16) sets forth his personal conduct.¹⁰⁰

Saul's background 9:1-2

Saul ("Asked [of God]," cf. 8:10) came from good Benjamite stock. His father was a man of property and influence. The same Hebrew expression, *gibbor hayil*, translated "valor," describes Boaz in Ruth 2:1 and King Jeroboam I in 1 Kings 11:28 (cf. 1 Sam. 16:18). Saul himself was physically impressive, tall, and handsome. At this time he would have been in his late 20s (cf. 13:1). God gave the people just what they wanted.

Saul's personal traits 9:3-14

Saul's concern for his father's peace of mind was commendable. It shows a sensitivity that would have been an asset in a king (v. 5). Likewise his desire to give Samuel a present for his help was praiseworthy (v. 7; cf. 1 Kings 14:3; 2 Kings 8:8-9). Saul had some appreciation for social propriety. He was also humble enough to ask directions from a woman (vv. 11-14).

The high place (v. 12) was a hilltop on which the people offered sacrifices and may have been Mizpah (cf. 7:9) or probably Ramah, Samuel's hometown (cf. v. 6).

Saul's introduction to Samuel 9:15-25

Even though God had broken the Philistines' domination at the Battle of Mizpah (7:10-11) they still threatened Israel occasionally and did so until David finally subdued them (v. 16).

". . . after the victory of Mizpeh [*sic*], the Philistines no longer totally controlled Israel and . . . did not again make a full-scale invasion."¹⁰¹

God referred to Saul as a "prince" (Heb. *negid*, v. 16), a king-designate. Notwithstanding Yahweh was Israel's true "king." Also in verse 17 the Hebrew word translated "rule" (*asar*) usually means "restrain." Saul would not rule as most kings did but would restrain the people as God's vice-regent.

¹⁰⁰You may want to read the series of three articles on Saul by W. Lee Humphries listed in the bibliography of these notes. Especially helpful is, "The Tragedy of King Saul: A Study of the Structure of 1 Samuel 9—31." The other two are quite technical.

¹⁰¹G. Coleman Luck, "The First Meeting of Saul and Samuel," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 124:495 (July-September 1967):259.

Samuel gave preference to Saul by inviting him to go up before him to the high place (v. 19). Samuel promised Saul that not only his lost donkeys but all that was desirable in Israel would soon come into his possession (v. 20). Saul's humble response to Samuel was admirable (v. 21; cf. Exod. 3:11; 4:10; Jer. 1:6).

"On the one side Saul was a man hunting for donkeys who instead found a kingdom; and on the other side there was Samuel, who was looking for a suitable king and found a young man of remarkable political unawareness."¹⁰²

Evidently a dining hall stood near the high place (v. 22). It may have been a room in a larger religious building.¹⁰³ Giving the special leg of meat to Saul was a sign of special honor (vv. 23-24). Before retiring for the night, Samuel and Saul continued their conversation on the typically flat roof of the house, perhaps for privacy (v. 25; cf. Acts 10:9).

Saul's private anointing by Samuel 9:26—10:8

Anointing with oil was a symbolic act in Israel that pictured consecration to service. The only things anointed with oil before this anointing were the priests and the tabernacle. The oil symbolized God's Spirit, and anointing with oil represented endowment with that Spirit for enablement (cf. 1 John 2:27). In the ancient Near East a representative of a nation's god customarily anointed the king whom the people from then on viewed as the representative of that god on earth.¹⁰⁴ Thus Saul would have understood that Samuel was setting him apart as God's vice-regent and endowing him with God's power to serve effectively. Beginning with Saul kings were similar to priests in Israel as far as representing God and experiencing divine enablement. Samuel's kiss was a sign of affection and respect since now Saul was God's special representative on the earth. Samuel reminded Saul that the Israelites were the Lord's inheritance, another comment that Saul unfortunately did not take to heart (cf. 9:13).

Samuel then gave Saul three signs that would verify to the new king that Samuel had anointed him in harmony with God's will. The first of these would have strengthened Saul's confidence in God's ability to control the people under his authority (v. 2).¹⁰⁵ The second would have helped Saul realize that the people would accept him and make sacrifices for him (vv. 3-4). The third would have assured him that he did indeed possess supernatural enablement from God (vv. 5-6).¹⁰⁶

¹⁰²David Payne, p. 45. Saul's unawareness is evident in that he did not know who Samuel was even though Samuel was Israel's leading judge and prophet.

¹⁰³Youngblood, pp. 622-23.

¹⁰⁴Roland de Vaux, *The Bible and the Ancient Near East*, pp. 152-66.

¹⁰⁵On the subject of the location of Rachel's tomb, see Matitiah Tsevat, "Studies in the Book of Samuel," *Hebrew Union College Annual* 33 (1962):107-18.

¹⁰⁶The "hill of God" (lit. Gibeath-haelohim, v. 5) was probably Gibeon. See Aaron Demsky, "Geba, Gibeah, and Gibeon—An Historico-Geographic Riddle," *Bulletin of the American School of Oriental Research* 212 (December 1973):27.

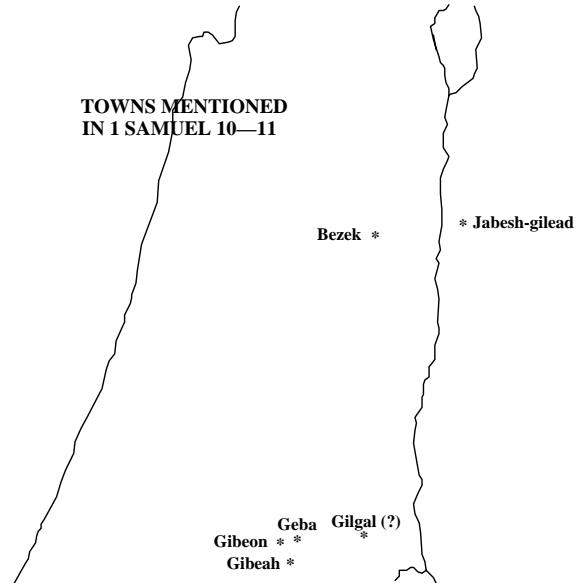
Since God chose and equipped Saul to rule His people it seems most likely that he was a genuine believer. Samuel gave Saul his first orders as God's vice-regent (v. 8). Unfortunately he disobeyed them (13:8-14). Perhaps the tabernacle now stood at Gilgal since Samuel planned to offer burnt and peace offerings there. However, Samuel may have sacrificed at places other than the tabernacle. Again we can see that the tabernacle was not one of the writer's main concerns.

God's enablement of Saul 10:9-16

We should probably not interpret the reference to God changing Saul's heart (v. 9) to mean that at this time Saul experienced personal salvation. This always takes place when a person believes God's promise, and there is no indication in the context that Saul did that at this time. Probably it means that God gave him a different viewpoint on things since he had received the Holy Spirit.¹⁰⁷ In Old Testament psychology the heart was the seat of the will.

God's Spirit also gave Saul the ability to prophesy (v. 10). This was the outward evidence that God was with Saul. It apparently involved the Holy Spirit controlling these men and their manifesting His control with ecstatic behavior (cf. 19:20-24). The evidence of this new gift surprised people who knew Saul, and they took note of it (v. 11).

The question, "Who is their father?" (v. 12) inquired about the source of the ecstatic behavior of all the prophets including Saul. It was indeed an evidence of God's presence and working in their lives.¹⁰⁸ The proverb that evolved from this incident (cf. 19:24) was derogatory. Some of the people felt that the strange behavior of prophets was inappropriate, especially for their king (cf. 2 Sam. 6:13-16). Ironically their question did not express doubt that Saul was a prophet but confidence that God had empowered him.¹⁰⁹



¹⁰⁷One writer who took this as Saul's conversion is Zane C. Hodges, "The Salvation of Saul," *Grace Evangelical Society News* 9:4 (July-August 1994):1, 3.

¹⁰⁸Keil and Delitzsch, pp. 104-5.

¹⁰⁹Another view is that the question expressed a negative opinion such as, "Saul is no prophet." See John Sturdy, "The Original Meaning of 'Is Saul Also Among the Prophets?' (1 Samuel X 11, 12; XIX 24)," *Vetus Testamentum* 20:2 (April 1970):210.

The high place referred to in verse 13 is probably the same one mentioned earlier (vv. 5, 10), namely, Geba. Geba was only four miles from Saul's hometown, Gibeah. Saul's uncle may have been Abner (9:1; 14:50-51) or some other uncle.¹¹⁰

"These passages in 1 Samuel indicate that the writer of Samuel had no problem with high places so long as they were dedicated to Yahweh.

"In Kings, however, the attitude of the historian is clearly hostile to high places. He conceded the necessity of the people worshiping there (and by inference Solomon also) because of the lack of a temple. However, the historian was writing from a later perspective when religion had become syncretistic, and the high places were a snare to the people."¹¹¹

This section closes with another reference to Saul's humility (v. 16; cf. Phil 2:8; James 4:10; 1 Pet. 5:6).

3. The choice of Saul by lot 10:17-27

"Saul's rise to kingship over Israel took place in three distinct stages: He was (1) anointed by Samuel (9:1—10:16), (2) chosen by lot (10:17-27), and (3) confirmed by public acclamation (11:1-15).¹¹²

Saul's anointing had been private, but his choice by lot was public.

Mizpah was the scene of Israel's previous spiritual revival and victory over the Philistines (7:5-13). Perhaps Samuel chose this site for Saul's public presentation because of those events. As we have noted, the tabernacle may have been there as well. Samuel took the opportunity to remind Israel that Yahweh was Israel's real deliverer so the people would not put too much confidence in their new king (v. 18; cf. Exod. 20:2; Deut. 5:6; Judg. 6:8-9). He also reminded them of their rebellion against God's will (v. 19).¹¹³

The lot (v. 20) showed all Israel that Saul was God's choice, not Samuel's (cf. Josh. 7:14-18). That is, he was the king God permitted (Prov. 16:33). Was Saul hiding because he was humble or because he was afraid to assume the mantle of leadership? My judgment is that he was humble since there are other indications of this quality in chapters 9 and 10 (cf. Prov. 25:6-7).

". . . there seems to have been a modesty that was combined with a shy temperament."¹¹⁴

¹¹⁰D. R. Ap-Thomas, "Saul's 'Uncle,'" *Vetus Testamentum* 11 (1961):241-45.

¹¹¹Heater, p. 126.

¹¹²Youngblood, p. 623.

¹¹³See Bruce C. Birch, "The Choosing of Saul at Mizpah," *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 37:4 (1975):447-54.

¹¹⁴Baldwin, p. 90.

However, he may also have been wisely reluctant to assume the role and responsibilities of Israel's king. The Lord had chosen Saul (v. 24) because he would be God's instrument. Saul had the potential of becoming a great king of Israel. Consequently Samuel commended him, and most of the people supported him (vv. 24, 27). They cried, "Long live the king!"

"It [this cry] represents now, as it did then, the enthusiastic hopes of the citizenry that their monarch may remain hale and hearty in order to bring their fondest dreams to fruition."¹¹⁵

The ancient tell of Gibeah (v. 26) now stands three miles north of modern Jerusalem the buildings of which are clearly visible from the site. God further blessed Saul by inclining the hearts of valient men in Israel to support him. There were some, however, who did not support him. They were evidently looking on Saul's natural abilities as essential to Israel's success and were forgetting that Yahweh was the real source of her hope (v. 27; cf. Judg. 6:15-16). Saul was a wise enough man not to demand acceptance by every individual in Israel (cf. Prov. 14:29; Rom. 12:19; James 1:19-20). The reason he failed later was not because he lacked wisdom.

Throughout these verses Saul behaved in an exemplary fashion. However notice that the writer made no reference to his regard for God or God's Word. To all appearances Saul was very capable of serving as Israel's king. This is what the people wanted. They wanted a man similar to themselves to lead them. That is exactly what God gave them.

". . . it remains very clear that God did not choose this king for Himself, but rather for the people. In other words, though God actually appointed Saul, Saul did not in the final analysis represent God's choice, but the people's choice."¹¹⁶

Yet God gave them a man with great personal strengths: wisdom, humility, sensitivity, physical attractiveness, and wealth. His gift of Saul was a good gift, as are all God's gifts to His people (Luke 11:9-13). God did not give Israel a time bomb just waiting to go off. Saul failed because of the choices he made, not because he lacked the qualities necessary to succeed.

4. Saul's effective leadership in battle 11:1-11

Israel's king not only needed to be an admirable individual in his personal conduct, but he also needed to be an effective military commander. The writer pointed out Saul's abilities in this area in this chapter. The nation consequently united behind him because of his success. This was the third divine indication that God had chosen Saul to lead Israel following his private anointing and his public choice by lot.

¹¹⁵Youngblood, p. 631.

¹¹⁶G. Coleman Luck, "The First Glimpse of the First King of Israel," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 123:489 (January-March 1966):51.

The Ammonite siege of Jabesh-gilead 11:1-5

The Ammonites were Israel's enemies to the east. They were descendants of Lot whom Jephthah had defeated earlier (Judg. 11:12-33). Nahash evidently sought revenge for Jephthah's victory over his nation. Jabesh-gilead lay a few miles east of the Jordan Valley and about 25 miles south of the Sea of Chinnereth (Galilee).¹¹⁷ The men of Jabesh offered to surrender and serve the Ammonites if Nahash would make a covenant with them rather than slaughtering them.

Nahash's purpose to put out the right eye of his enemies was not uncommon in that day. This wound made a conquered nation easier to control, and it testified to the conqueror's superior power. Specifically it made aiming arrows with the right eye impossible and therefore insured the Ammonites' safety. Perhaps Nahash's decision to attack Jabesh-gilead was the result of the Israelites breaking a treaty with his nation.

"In the ancient Near East, the physical mutilation, dismemberment, or death of an animal or human victim could be expected as the inevitable penalty for treaty violation."¹¹⁸

Nahash's willingness to let his enemies appeal for help shows he had no fear that threatening reinforcements would come. He was sure of his superiority and may have viewed the delay as an opportunity to insure victory. At this time Israel lacked a central government, national solidarity, and a standing army. However, Saul was now Israel's king.

The announcement of the messengers from Jabesh led the people in Saul's hometown, as well as elsewhere undoubtedly, to weep. They had again forgotten God's promises to protect them since they were His people. Their reaction was a result of viewing the situation from the natural perspective only.

Why was Saul at home farming since he was Israel's king? He had not yet received direction from God or Samuel to do anything else as far as we know. The fact that he, the anointed king, was plowing shows his humility. Estate owners never worked the land themselves.¹¹⁹ Furthermore he was willing to work hard. Thus he was not self-centered at this time (cf. 2 Cor. 4:5).

Saul's deliverance of Jabesh-gilead 11:6-11

God's Spirit came on Saul in the sense that He stirred up his spirit (cf. 10:6, 10). His response to the messengers' news was appropriate indignation since non-Israelites were attacking God's covenant people (Gen. 12:3). Saul may have had a personal interest in Jabesh-gilead since some of his ancestors evidently came from there (cf. 31:11-13). Following the civil war in Israel, during which many Benjamites had died, many who

¹¹⁷Chinnereth is the Hebrew word for "lyre." The lake has the shape of a lyre, which accounts for its name.

¹¹⁸Youngblood, p. 637.

¹¹⁹Marvin Chaney, "Systemic Study of the Israelite Monarchy," *Semeia* 37 (1986):61.

remained alive had taken wives from the women of Jabesh-gilead and the women of Shiloh (Judg. 21).

Saul did something drastic to impress the gravity of the Ammonite siege on his fellow Israelites. He followed the example of the Levite whose concubine had died in Saul's hometown (Judg. 19:29-30). Later another plowman, Elisha, would slaughter a pair of oxen and host a meal for his friends as he began his ministry as a prophet (1 Kings 19:21).

"Saul's slaughter and dissection of his oxen is reminiscent of the Levite's treatment of his murdered concubine and clearly is designed to connect the commencement of his reign with the historical event which accounts for his Jabesh-Gilead maternal roots."¹²⁰

Saul linked himself with Samuel because Samuel was the recognized spiritual leader of the nation. The Israelites probably dreaded both Saul's threatened reprisals for not responding to his summons and the Ammonite threat.

"In Saul's energetic appeal the people discerned the power of Jehovah, which inspired them with fear, and impelled them to immediate obedience."¹²¹

The response of the Israelites constituted the greatest show of military strength since Joshua's day (assuming *eleph* means "thousand" here). Bezek lay about 16 miles west of Jabesh-gilead on the Jordan's western side (cf. Judg. 1:4-5). The division of the soldiers into Israelites and Judahites probably reflects the division of the nation that existed when the writer wrote this book. There is no evidence that such a division existed when the event recorded here happened.

The messengers returned to Jabesh-gilead with the promise that their town would be free by noon the next day. The leaders of Jabesh-gilead used a play on words as they cleverly led the Ammonites into self-confidence that they would win. The Ammonites had threatened to put out the right eyes of the men of Jabesh (v. 2). The Jabeshites now told the Ammonites to do whatever seemed good literally "in their eyes" (cf. 14:36).

Saul wisely divided his troops into three companies. He attacked the besieging Ammonites early in the morning. The morning watch was the last of three night watches, and it lasted from about 2:00 to 6:00 a.m.¹²² The Ammonites did not expect the other

¹²⁰Eugene H. Merrill, "The Book of Ruth: Narration and Shared Themes," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 142:566 (April-June 1985):140, n. 13.

¹²¹Keil and Delitzsch, p. 112.

¹²²These three watches had their origin in Mesopotamia, but all the western Asian nations observed them before the Christian era (cf. Lam. 2:19; Judg. 7:19). The only other place in the Old Testament where this phrase "at the morning watch" occurs in Hebrew is Exodus 14:24 (Youngblood, p. 639). Then God slew the Egyptian soldiers as they pursued the fleeing Israelites through the Red Sea. Perhaps the writer wanted his readers to view this victory as another miraculous deliverance at the beginning of a new phase of Israel's existence.

Israelites to show so much support for the Jabeshites. Saul thoroughly surprised and defeated them.¹²³

5. The confirmation of Saul as king 11:12—12:25

Israel's commitment to Saul 11:12-15

Admirably Saul sought no personal revenge on those who initially had failed to support him (10:27; cf. Judg. 20:13; Luke 19:27). Furthermore he gave God the glory for his victory (cf. Jon. 2:9; Ps. 20:7; Prov. 21:31). He was not self-serving at this time.

What Samuel called for was a ceremony to renew the Mosaic Covenant.¹²⁴ It was to be similar to those that had taken place in Joshua's day (Josh. 8 and 24) in which the nation would dedicate itself afresh to Yahweh and His Law as a nation (cf. Deut. 29). As mentioned earlier, it is not clear whether Gilgal refers to the Gilgal near Jericho or another Gilgal a few miles north of Bethel.¹²⁵ A Gilgal north of Bethel would have been closer since most of the activities recorded in these first chapters of 1 Samuel (at Ramah, Gibeah, Mizpah, etc.) were near Bethel. Yet the Gilgal near Jericho was the Israelites' first camp after they entered the Promised Land and the place where they first renewed the covenant in the land (Josh. 4—5). For this reason that site would have stimulated the people's remembrance of God's faithfulness to them and His plans for them as a united nation. Hopefully further archaeological discoveries will enable us to solve the puzzle concerning which Gilgal this was.

The people now gave united support to Saul as their king at Gilgal. This is the first of three significant meetings of Samuel and Saul at Gilgal. The second was the time Saul failed to wait for the prophet, offered a sacrifice prematurely, and received his mentor's rebuke (13:7-14). The third meeting was when God rejected Saul as king for his disobedient pride following his victory over the Amelekites (15:10-26).

Peace offerings expressed thanks to God for His goodness. This offering also emphasized the unity of the participants in the sacrifice (Lev. 3).

"Saul's ascent to the throne was now complete, and the 'great celebration' that accompanied the sacrificial ritual more than matched Israel's earlier elation upon their receiving the messengers' report of the imminent doom of the Ammonites (v. 9)."¹²⁶

In this incident Israel faced a very threatening situation physically and spiritually. The people's reaction was to weep (v. 4). God went into action because He had made

¹²³For another interpretation of 11:1-11 that views it as an artificially constructed story, see Diana Edelman, "Saul's Rescue of Jabesh-Gilead (1 Sam 11:1-11): Sorting Story from History," *Zeitschrift für die Alttestamentliche Wissenschaft* 96:2 (1984):195-209.

¹²⁴Klaus Baltzer, *The Covenant Formulary*, pp. 66-68; William J. Dumbrell, *Covenant and Creation*, p. 135; Lyle M. Eslinger, *Kingship of God in Crisis*, pp. 37, 383-428.

¹²⁵See my comments on 7:16.

¹²⁶Youngblood, p. 642.

promises of protection to His people (cf. Heb. 13:5-6). He provided deliverance when His people thought there was no hope. The result was that God's people rededicated themselves to following the Lord faithfully. Their weeping gave way to rejoicing.

In this incident we also see Saul humble and hard-working (v. 5). God's Spirit empowered him (v. 6), and gave him wisdom (vv. 7-8) and victory (v. 11). Saul gave God the glory for his success, and he was merciful and forgiving toward his critics (v. 13). God also gave him favor in the eyes of His people (v. 15; cf. 2:30; Prov. 16:7).

Samuel's second warning to the people ch. 12

The writer wrote chapters 12—15 very skillfully to parallel chapters 8—11. Each section begins with Samuel warning the people about the dangers of their requesting a king (chs. 8 and 12). Each one also follows with a description of Saul's exploits (chs. 9—10 and 13—14) and ends with Saul leading Israel in battle (chs. 11 and 15). This parallel structure vividly sets off the contrast between Saul's early success as Israel's king and his subsequent failure. The reason he failed is the primary theological lesson of these chapters, and it is a continuation of the fertility motif.

Chapter 12 is another most important theological passage in Samuel along with 1 Samuel 7 and 2 Samuel 7. Here Samuel explained Israel's future relationship with Yahweh and the Mosaic Law since the people insisted on having a king and had rejected Yahweh and Samuel.

"With this address Samuel laid down his office as judge, but without therefore ceasing as prophet to represent the people before God, and to maintain the rights of God in relation to the king."¹²⁷

"This chapter . . . formally marks the end of the period of the judges . . ."¹²⁸

Samuel's self-vindication 12:1-5

Why did Samuel feel the need to justify his behavior publicly? Perhaps he knew that because the people had rebelled against God by demanding a king they would experience discipline from the Lord. When it came he did not want anyone to think he was responsible for it. Samuel's words may seem to expose personal pride. I think more probably they express his concern that no one conclude that living a life of commitment to God, as he had lived, would bring God's discipline. The discipline to come would be a result of the sin of the people, not Samuel. Furthermore by his life and ministry among them Samuel had given the people no reason for demanding a king. He was also seeking to vindicate the type of rule he represented that was God's will for Israel then.

¹²⁷Keil and Delitzsch, p. 115.

¹²⁸Gordon, p. 125.

"Here, as in 8:11-18, a keyword is the verb *take*: if kingship was to be characterized by the tendency to take rather than to give, it was otherwise with the prophet. As he stepped down from high office, Samuel's hands were empty (verse 5)."¹²⁹

Samuel's review of God's faithfulness 12:6-12

Neither had God given the people occasion to demand a king. He had delivered them in the past from all their enemies when they confessed their sins, repented, and sought His help. They had been unfaithful to God and had disobeyed His Law, but He remained faithful to His commitment and promises to them.

Samuel's challenge to obey God 12:13-18

The Hebrew grammatical construction translated "the king whom you have chosen, whom you have asked for" (v. 13) shows that the people had not just requested a king but demanded him out of strong self-will. The key to Israel's future blessing would be her fearing Yahweh, serving Him, listening to His voice through the Mosaic Law and the prophets, and not rebelling against His commands (v. 14). The major message of the Books of Samuel thus comes through again clearly in Samuel's final words to the nation, as we would expect. For the Israelites, obedience to the Mosaic Covenant would result in fertility of all kinds (cf. Deut. 28:1-14).

God confirmed the truth of Samuel's words supernaturally when He sent rain during the wheat harvest, the driest period of the year. The rain symbolized the blessing of God for obedience (cf. Deut. 28:12). This storm was a sign that Yahweh was supporting Samuel.

Samuel's reassurance of the people 12:19-25

The people's rebellion against God was not something they could undo. Consequences would follow. Nevertheless Samuel counselled them to follow and serve the Lord faithfully from then on. They should not fear that God would abandon them because of their sin of demanding a king. He would not cast them off because He had promised to stay with them and had committed Himself to them (Exod. 19:5-6). His name (reputation) would suffer if He abandoned them.

Not only did the Israelites need to walk in obedience to God, they also needed the supportive intercession of Samuel that would bring down God's enablement so they could follow Him faithfully. This Samuel promised them, too. Intercession is a vitally important ministry of leaders of God's people, and Samuel realized this (Jer. 15:1; Ps. 99:6).

"Prophetic intercession is regarded as essential to Israel's continued prosperity; only when her doom is sealed is a prophet told to desist (Je. 11:14; 14:11). Samuel's ministry of intercession and teaching, exercised

¹²⁹David Payne, pp. 57-58.

independently of the offices of state, becomes the norm for those who followed him in the prophetic succession. These are 'the irreducible aspects of the prophetic office' (McCarter, p. 219)."¹³⁰

To fear and serve God faithfully the Israelites would need to remember God's faithfulness to them in the past and to bear in mind the certain consequences of disobedience (cf. Deut. 28:41, 64-64; 30:15-20). The dark alternative was being swept away in exile.

This chapter sets forth clearly the basic principles by which God deals with His people. As such it is very important. It explains why things happened as they did in Israel and in the personal lives of the major characters that the writer emphasized.

In chapters 8—12 the record emphasizes that even though the people insisted on having a king God gave them one who was personally admirable and victorious in battle. Everything about Saul in these chapters is positive. God gave blessing to His people as long as their representative submitted to His authority.

C. KINGSHIP REMOVED FROM SAUL CHS. 13—15

This section documents Saul's disobedience to the revealed will of God that resulted in his disqualification as Israel's king. Saul's failure proved to be God's instrument of discipline on the people as a whole for their demand for a king. Failure followed disregard for God's Word.

Baldwin expressed well the situation Saul faced as he began to reign.

"In relation to Samuel, it is obvious that Saul had a problem. On the one hand he owed his appointment to Samuel, but on the other hand he was taking over Samuel's position as Israel's leader. Samuel spoke frequently of the wickedness of the people in requesting a king, apparently implying that he, Saul, should not really be in office. Yet Saul had not sought to be king, and would have preferred, at least at first, to have been left in obscurity, but he had not been offered any option. Too many signs had been given that he was the person of God's appointment, and prayers for deliverance from the Ammonites had been marvelously answered. He was king by divine anointing, by God's overruling of the sacred lot, and by united popular demand. He had caught the imagination of the people, who wanted a hero, and against all odds he was expected to pass muster.

"Had he realized it, Saul could have gained much by the presence of a seasoned prophet like Samuel alongside him, ready to give guidance, instruction and, if necessary, rebuke. Above all, Samuel was an intercessor who knew the Lord's mind, and saw prayer answered. Samuel would indicate the right way, and all Saul had to do was follow. He could have

¹³⁰Gordon, p. 130. His quotation is from P. Kyle McCarter Jr., *1 Samuel*.

leant [*sic*] hard on Samuel and he would have found reassurance. In the event, this was exactly what Saul could not bring himself to do."¹³¹

Saul's improper response to his predecessor, Samuel, should be a warning to all ministers whose predecessors remain on the scene after they replace them.

1. Saul's disobedience at Gilgal 13:1-15

The writer introduced the history of Saul's reign by referring to the king's age and possibly the length of his reign. Verse one contains a textual corruption in the Hebrew text.¹³² There the verse reads, "Saul was . . . years old when he began to reign, and he reigned . . . two years over Israel."

The first problem is Saul's age when he began to reign. No other text of Scripture gives us his age at this time. The NASB translators have supplied "40" and the NIV translators "30." The AV translators wrote, "Saul [was . . . years old]," leaving the number undefined.

Saul reigned about 40 years (Acts 13:21). If he was about 40 years old when he began to reign, he would have been about 80 when he died in battle on Mt. Gilboa (ch. 31). This seems very old in view of the account in chapter 31. Even if Saul was 70 he would have been quite old, hardly the age we would assume as we read chapter 31. The account of his anointing by Samuel pictures a young adult with a measure of maturity. I would suggest that 40 may be the first number that the copyists lost in 13:1. My reasons follow below.

The second problem is, what was the second number in 13:1 that is absent in the Hebrew text? The NASB has "32," the NIV "42," and the AV "2." If the last part of verse 1 gives us the length of Saul's reign, as is customary in similar summaries of kings' reigns (cf. 1 Kings 14:21; 22:42; 2 Kings 8:17, 26; et al.), the missing number probably should be 42.¹³³ If the last part of verse 1 gives the year of Saul's reign in which the events of chapter 13 happened, the number probably should be 2. I think probably the total length of Saul's reign is in view in verse 1. I prefer the NIV's 42 years here.

When did the events of this chapter happen if the last number in verse 1 indicates the length of Saul's reign? In 10:8 Samuel commanded Saul to go to Gilgal and to wait seven days for him there. In 13:8 we read that Saul went to Gilgal and waited seven days for Samuel there. Therefore the events of chapter 13 appear to have followed those in chapter 10 soon.¹³⁴

¹³¹Baldwin, p. 102.

¹³²On the many problems with the Hebrew text of Samuel, see Martin, pp. 209-222.

¹³³In this case, 40 in Acts 13:21 must be a round number.

¹³⁴Merrill, *Kingdom of . . .*, p. 193, believed Saul's disobedience at Gilgal took place in the second year of his reign.

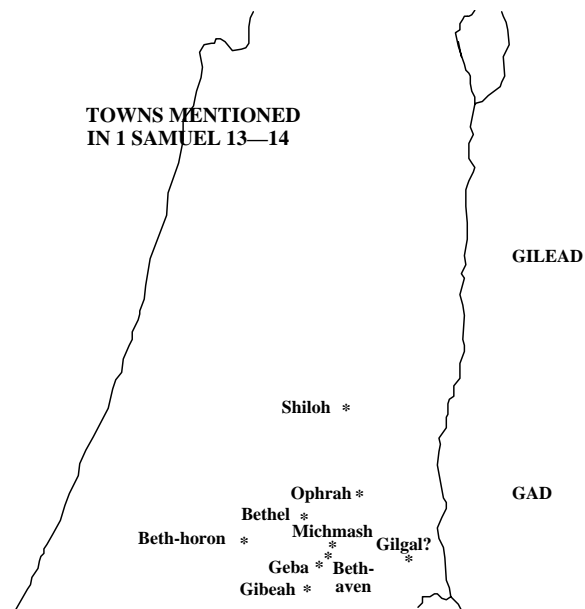
However in 13:3 Jonathan is old enough to lead an invasion against a Philistine garrison. Jonathan must have been at least about 20 to do that. If he was about 20 and this was the beginning of Saul's reign, we have two problems. First, Saul must have been somewhat older than 30 when he began ruling. Yet this would make him quite old when he died in battle, as explained above. I think he was probably about 40 even though this would make him about 80 when he died. Second, if Jonathan was about 20 at the beginning of Saul's reign, he would have been about 60 when he died with Saul since Saul reigned about 40 years (Acts 13:21). If David was a contemporary of Jonathan, as 1 Samuel implies, David began reigning when Jonathan was about 60. Yet 2 Samuel 5:4 says David was 30 when he began to reign.

Some of the evidence (10:8 and 13:8) seems to support the view that the events of chapter 13 happened early in Saul's reign. Other evidence (the ages of David and Jonathan) suggests that they may have happened much later. I favor the view that the events in chapter 13 follow those in chapter 10 closely.¹³⁵

Gibeah was Saul's hometown and his capital. Michmash was five miles northeast of Gibeah, and Geba was four. Evidently Saul wanted to clear the area around Gibeah—and the central Benjamin plateau on which it stood—of Philistines to make this center of Israelite life more secure. Jonathan's initial victory at Geba provoked the Philistines who massed their forces across the steep valley between Geba and Michmash.¹³⁶ Saul mustered the Israelite forces in the Jordan Valley at Gilgal, about 12 miles east of Michmash.¹³⁷ In doing so, he was following orders that Samuel had given him earlier (10:8). Apparently Saul was to meet Samuel to offer sacrifices of worship before he engaged the Philistines in battle.

Because of the superior Philistine army the Israelite soldiers were afraid and some even fled (cf. Judg. 6:2). The enemy must have been strong to threaten Israel's eastern territory since Philistia was Israel's neighbor to the west.

"Since 'Hebrew' was commonly used by non-Israelites as a synonym for 'Israelite' (cf. 4:5-10), it is understandable that the two terms should alternate throughout the narratives of the Philistine wars in chapters 13—14."¹³⁸



¹³⁵See again the "Chronology of 1 and 2 Samuel" at the beginning of these notes.

¹³⁶This is the first mention of Jonathan, whose name means "The Lord has given."

¹³⁷Keil and Delitzsch, pp. 127-28.

¹³⁸Youngblood, p. 654.

Fearful lest the mass desertion of his soldiers continue Saul decided to slay the sacrificial animals before engaging the enemy and to attack rather than to wait for Samuel to come and offer the sacrifices. This was a violation of the prophet's orders (10:8).¹³⁹ Saul could have asked for the Lord's help in prayer, of course, as Hannah did. Evidently ritual was very important to him so he offered the sacrifice and disobeyed Samuel. His choice suggests that he had a rather superficial relationship with Yahweh. Contrast Gideon who also faced overwhelming odds fearfully yet trusted and obeyed Yahweh nonetheless (Judg. 6).

Saul's punishment may appear excessively severe at first. However the king of Israel was the Lord's lieutenant. Any disobedience to his Commander-in-Chief was an act of insubordination that threatened the whole administrative organization of God's kingdom on earth. Saul failed to perceive his place and responsibility under God.¹⁴⁰ He assumed more authority than was his. For this reason God would not establish a dynasty for him (cf. 24:21). Had he obeyed on this occasion God would have placed Saul's descendants on his throne for at least one generation if not more (v. 13; cf. 1 Kings 11:38). Perhaps Saul's descendants would have reigned in a parallel kingdom with the king from Judah.¹⁴¹ Now Saul's son would not succeed him. Eventually God would have raised up a king from the tribe of Judah even if Saul had followed the Lord faithfully (Gen. 49:10). That king probably would have been David.

Samuel's departure from the battlefield (v. 15) was symbolic of the breach that now opened up between Samuel and Saul. Saul's presumptuous plan also failed to bring his departing soldiers back to him.

2. Saul's struggle against the Philistines 13:16—14:23

The results of Saul's disobedience 13:16-23

The writer explained the military disaster that resulted from Saul's disobedience in verses 16-18. Saul's army dwindled and the enemy continued to move around his capital city freely.

Saul evidently led his troops from Gilgal to Geba where some of the Israelite soldiers camped. Saul himself proceeded back to Gibeah (14:2). The Philistines had posted a larger camp of their soldiers just north of the Wadi Suweinit ravine from Geba near Michmash. The Philistines used their camp (garrison, v. 23) at Michmash as a base for raiding parties. From Michmash these raiders went north toward Ophrah, west toward Beth-horon, and probably southeast toward the wilderness, specifically the valley of Zeboim (exact site unknown).

¹³⁹Contrast David's submission to Nathan the prophet (2 Sam. 12:1-15) with Saul's rebellion against Samuel the prophet.

¹⁴⁰Contrast King Hezekiah's appropriate behavior in a similar situation in 2 Chronicles 29:25.

¹⁴¹J. Dwight Pentecost, *Thy Kingdom Come*, p. 139; Youngblood, p. 657.

The main physical advantage the Philistines enjoyed was their ability to smelt iron. This advanced technology gave them a strong military edge over the Israelites.¹⁴² As in the days of Deborah and Barak (Judg. 5:8), the Philistines still had the advantage of superior weapons and the power to restrict the Israelites' use of iron implements.

Jonathan's success at Michmash 14:1-23

Armed with trust in God and courage Jonathan ventured out to destroy Israel's enemy in obedience to God's command to drive out the inhabitants of Canaan (cf. 9:16). He would have made a good king of Israel. Saul remained in Gibeah evidently on the defensive. His comfortable position under a fruit tree (cf. 22:6; Judg. 4:5) in secure Gibeah surrounded by his soldiers contrasts with Jonathan's vulnerable and difficult position with only the support of his armorbearer. Jonathan was launching out in faith to obey God, but Saul was resting comfortably and failing to do God's will.

The reference to priestly activity at Shiloh (v. 3) shows that the nation still regarded Shiloh as a cultic site (i.e., a site where the people practiced formal worship).

"Saul is accompanied by Ahijah, a member of the rejected priestly house of Eli (14:3), and this first mention of an Elide after the disasters which befell Eli's family in chap. 4 triggers the response 'rejected by Yhwh.' Lest the point be missed, it is reinforced by the odd and needless genealogical reference to Ichabod, Ahijah's uncle, picking up on 4:21-22, and reminding the reader that 'the glory has departed.' His own royal glory gone, where else would we expect Saul to be than with a relative of 'Glory gone'? The axes [*sic*] which here intersect, the rejection of Saul and the rejection of the Elide priesthood, will do so again in 22:11-19, when Saul will bloodily fulfill the prophecy of 2:31-33, wreaking Yhwh's will on the Elides."¹⁴³

Bozez (v. 4, lit. shining) was the south-facing cliff near the Philistine camp at Michmash, perhaps so named because it reflected the sun that shone on it from the south. Seneh (lit. thorny) faced north and was closer to Geba. Jonathan's route was an extremely difficult one. This fact accounts for his being able to surprise the Philistines.

In contrast to Saul, Jonathan had a true perception of God's role as the leader and deliverer of His people (v. 6). He viewed the Philistines as unbelievers whom God wanted exterminated (cf. Gen. 17). He believed that God would work for His people in response to faith, as He had done repeatedly in Israel's history. He also had learned that superior numbers were not necessary for God to give victory in battle (cf. 17:47; Judg. 7:4, 7).

¹⁴²Dothan, p. 20.

¹⁴³David Jobling, "Saul's Fall and Jonathan's Rise: Tradition and Redaction in 1 Sam 14:1-46," *Journal of Biblical Literature* 95:3 (1976):368-69.

"Other parallels with the story of Gideon commend themselves as well: the hero accompanied by only one servant (v. 7; cf. Judg 7:10-11); the sign (vv. 9-10; cf. Judg 7:13-15); the panic (v. 15; cf. Judg 7:21); the confusion, causing the enemy soldiers to turn on 'each other with their swords' (v. 20; cf. Judg 7:22); reinforcements from the 'hill country of Ephraim' (v. 22; cf. Judg 7:24); and the pursuit (v. 22; cf. Judg 7:23 . . .)." ¹⁴⁴

CLOSE-UP OF THE BATTLE OF MICHMASH

Michmash

*

Beth-aven? *

Bozez cliffs

Wadi Suweinit ravine

Seneh cliffs

*

Geba

Gibeah

*

Perhaps Jonathan chose his sign arbitrarily simply to determine how the Lord wanted him to proceed. Some commentators have felt he did not.

"If the Philistines said, 'Wait till we come,' they would show some courage; but if they said, 'Come up to us,' it would be a sign that they were cowardly . . ." ¹⁴⁵

Half a furrow of land (v. 14) was half a parcel of land that a yolk of oxen could plow in one day. Evidently God assisted Jonathan by sending a mild earthquake to unnerve the Philistines further (v. 15; cf. Deut. 7:23).

When Saul should have been acting he was waiting, and when he should have been waiting he was acting (vv. 18-19). He may have viewed the ark as a talisman that he planned to use to secure God's help. As Saul watched, the multitude of Philistine soldiers that covered the area began to dwindle. He evidently concluded that he did not need to seek the Lord's guidance or blessing (cf. 13:12).

God caused the Philistines to fight one another (v. 20; cf. Judg. 7:22; 2 Chron. 20:23). Some Israelite deserters or mercenaries who were fighting for the Philistines even changed their allegiance and took sides with their brethren. The tide of battle had turned. Beth-aven stood near Michmash, but the exact site is uncertain.

3. Saul's cursing of Jonathan 14:24-46

Jonathan, a man of faith, initiated a great victory, but in this section we see that Saul, a man of pride, limited the extent of that victory while trying to extend it. Saul's failure to submit to Yahweh's authority resulted in his behaving foolishly more than wickedly.

¹⁴⁴Youngblood, p. 661.

¹⁴⁵Keil and Delitzsch, p. 138.

Saul's selfishness 14:24-35

Saul's improper view of his role as Israel's king comes through clearly in verse 24. The Philistines were not Saul's enemies as much as God's enemies. This was holy war (cf. Judg. 16:28), but Saul viewed the battle too personally. His selfish desire to win for his own glory led him to issue a foolish command.

An oath was an extremely serious matter in the ancient Near East (v. 26; cf. Judg. 14:8-9). One did not violate a king's oath without suffering severe consequences. Jonathan saw the folly of Saul's oath clearly because he wanted God's glory (vv. 29-30). The Hebrew word translated "troubled" (v. 29, *'akar*) is the same one from which "Achan" and "Achor" (Josh. 7:25-26) come. Saul, not Jonathan, had troubled Israel, as Achan had, by his foolish command (v. 24).

Aijalon (v. 31) was about 17 miles west of Michmash. Verses 32-34 illustrate the confusion that resulted from Saul's misguided oath. The Mosaic Law forbade eating meat with the blood still in it (Lev. 17:10-14). The great stone (v. 33) served as a slaughtering table where the priests carefully prepared the meat for eating.

Saul was not entirely insensitive to Yahweh and His will. We can see this in his concern to observe the ritual dietary law (v. 33) and his desire to honor God for the victory (v. 35; cf. Exod. 17:14-16).¹⁴⁶ There are many examples of spiritually sensitive Israelites building altars to God (e.g., 7: 17; Gen. 12:8; Judg. 6:24; 2 Sam. 24:25; 1 Chron. 21:18). The writer's note that this was the first altar that Saul built reflects his general lack of commitment to Yahweh.

Saul's blindness to his guilt 14:36-46

Evidently Saul would not have inquired of God if Ahijah (cf. v. 18) had not suggested he do so (v. 36). Probably God did not answer his prayer immediately because Saul wanted this information to vindicate himself rather than God (v. 37). Saul thought God did not answer him because someone had violated his rule (v. 24), which he confused with God's law calling violation of it sin (v. 38; cf. Josh. 7:14). Really God did not answer him because Saul was disloyal to Yahweh. The king boldly vowed that anyone who had sinned, which was only breaking his rule, even Jonathan, would die (v. 39). God identified Jonathan rather than Saul as the guilty party. Jonathan had violated the king's command though he had not violated God's command. Really Jonathan was executing God's will.

Jonathan would have had to die if he had broken Yahweh's command, as Achan did. However, Saul's oath was not on that high a level of authority though Saul thought it was as is clear from his insistence that Jonathan die. The soldiers who had gone along with Saul's requests thus far (vv. 36, 40) refused to follow his orders when he called for Jonathan's execution (v. 45). They recognized that Saul's rule about abstaining from

¹⁴⁶Gordon, p. 140, believed Saul built this altar simply to make amends for his legal infringement, not to express gratitude for the day's victory.

eating (v. 24) was not divine law. They correctly saw that even though Jonathan had violated Saul's rule he had obeyed God's order to drive Israel's enemies out of the land. Saul's failure to see his role under God and the difference between the Word of God and his own commands resulted in confusion and disunity. Saul's preoccupation with Jonathan's eating against his wishes cost him a great victory over the Philistines.

The writer pointed out the reason for Saul's ultimate failure as Israel's king and the reason for his own personal destruction in this section (13:1—14:46). Essentially Saul refused to put the will of God above his own personal desires. Careful attention to the text shows that Saul showed great concern about the observance of religious rituals, but he failed to appreciate the indispensable importance of submitting his will to Yahweh. He sought to use God rather than allowing God to use him. He thought he was above the Mosaic Law rather than under it. He put himself in the position that God alone rightfully occupied.

To illustrate the seriousness of Saul's sin, suppose two parents have two children. The first child has a real heart for what pleases his parents. Whenever this child rarely disobeys his parents, his conscience bothers him, he confesses his offense to his parents, and he tries to be obedient from then on. This was how David responded to God. Even though David sinned greatly by committing adultery and murder, these sins broke his heart, he confessed them to God, and he returned to following God faithfully. His heart was one with God's. He wanted to please God and honor God even though he failed miserably occasionally.

The second child in the family in this illustration really wants to run his own life. He submits to parental authority when it seems to him to be to his advantage to do so, but his heart is really not with his parents. He wants to control his own life and believes he can do a better job of it on his own than by following his parents' instructions. This was Saul's attitude. Saul never submitted to divine authority unless he felt it was to his advantage to do so. He always wanted to maintain control over his own life.

Which of these two children has the more serious problem of disobedience? The second child does. Saul's sin was worse than David's. Even though David committed a few great sins, God did not cut off his dynasty or his rule prematurely since he really wanted to glorify God. However, David suffered severe consequences for his sins even though God forgave him. God did cut off Saul's dynasty and his rule prematurely because Saul would not yield to Yahweh's control, which was crucial for Israel's king. Failure to yield control to God is extremely important, even more important than individual acts of disobedience.

Saul's pride led him to make foolish decisions that limited his effectiveness. Many believers experience unnecessary confusion and complications in their lives because they will not relinquish control to God (cf. Rom. 6:13; 12:1-2).

4. Saul's limited effectiveness in battle 14:47-52

Saul was an active warrior and was effective to an extent due to his native abilities and God's limited blessing. He punished the enemies of Israel (vv. 47-48), which was God's will. Yet he did not subdue and defeat them all as David did.

The information concerning Saul's family members that the writer recorded here corresponds to other similar ancient Near Eastern texts. It was common to give this information as part of a summary of a king's accomplishments (cf. 2 Sam. 8). Ishvi is probably an alternative name for Ishbosheth.

God brought valiant warriors to David and previously to Saul (10:26), but Saul now had to recruit these as he observed them. This is another indication of God's limited blessing on Saul. In contrast, hundreds of soldiers volunteered to serve with David. Saul established a standing army in Israel for the first time (cf. 8:11).

5. Yahweh's final rejection of Saul ch. 15

"In the short pericope 13:7b-15a obedience was the stone on which Saul stumbled; here it is the rock that crushes him."¹⁴⁷

Chapter 15 records one of the battles Saul had with the Amalekites, Israel's enemy to the south (cf. 14:48). Most scholars are sure Saul attacked the Amalekites who lived in southern Judah though some feel he attacked an enclave of them in western Samaria.¹⁴⁸ Saul did not destroy all the Amalekites at this time (27:8; 30:1; 2 Sam. 8:12). King Hezekiah completely annihilated them years later (1 Chron. 4:43).

God directed Saul through Samuel (vv. 1-3). Consequently for Saul to disobey what Samuel said was tantamount to disobeying God. Samuel reminded Saul that Yahweh was the Lord of hosts (v. 2), his commander-in-chief. Saul's mission was to annihilate the Amalekites plus their animals completely (v. 3; cf. Deut. 7:2-6; 12:2-3; 20:16-18). God had commanded Joshua to do the same to Jericho; every breathing thing was to die (Josh. 6:17-21; cf. Deut. 20:16-18). Saul was now to put the Amalekites under the ban (Heb. *herem*).¹⁴⁹ God had plainly commanded this destruction of the Amalekites through Moses (Exod. 17:16; Deut. 25:17-19; cf. Num. 24:20; Gen. 12:3). Thus there was no question what the will of God involved. The phrase "utterly destroy" (Heb. *heherim*) occurs seven times in this account (vv. 3, 8, 9 [twice], 15, 18, 20) showing that God's will was clear and that Saul's disobedience was not an oversight.

"The agent of divine judgment can be impersonal (e.g., the Flood or the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah) or personal (as here), and in his

¹⁴⁷Ibid., p. 142.

¹⁴⁸E.g., Diane Edelmam, "Saul's Battle Against Amaleq (1 Sam. 15)," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 35 (June 1986):74-81.

¹⁴⁹This practice was not unique to Israel; the Moabites and presumably other ancient Near Eastern nations also put cities and groups of people under the ban. See Gordon, pp. 143, 147-48.

sovereign purpose God often permits entire families or nations to be destroyed if their corporate representatives are willfully and incorrigibly wicked (cf. Josh 7:1, 10-13, 24-26)."¹⁵⁰

The Amalekites (v. 6) were descendants of Esau (Gen. 36:12) whereas the Kenites traced their ancestry from Midian, one of Abraham's sons by Keturah (Gen. 25:2). The Kenites had been friendly to Israel (Exod. 18:9, 10, 19; Num. 10:29-32) whereas the Amalekites had not. There may have been a treaty between the Israelites and the Kenites.¹⁵¹

Saul's criterion for what he put to death was not part of God's command but his own judgment (v. 9). Again, Saul's defective view of his role under Yahweh's sovereign rule is obvious. God had earlier revealed through Balaam that Israel's king "shall be higher than Agag" (Num. 24:7). As Achan had done, Saul misused some of what God had devoted to another purpose. Clearly Saul set his will against the orders of his Commander; he was "not willing" to destroy everything that breathed (v. 9). His obedience was selective.

The phrase "the word of the Lord came to" occurs only three times in 1 and 2 Samuel (v. 10; cf. 2 Sam. 7:4; 24:11). In all cases it refers to an important message of judgment that God sent Israel's king through a prophet. God regretted that He had made Saul king (v. 11) because of Saul's actions, not because God felt He had made a mistake in calling Saul. Saul's failure to follow God faithfully also broke Samuel's heart. The disobedience of leaders always grieves the hearts of God's faithful servants. Samuel foresaw the consequences of Saul's actions. The village of Carmel stood about 8 miles south and a little east of Hebron. The monument Saul set up honored himself, not God who gave him the victory. When Moses defeated the Amalekites, he built an altar (Exod. 17:15-16); but when Saul defeated them, he erected a stele (cf. 2 Sam. 18:18).

Consistent with his view of his own behavior Saul claimed to have obeyed God (v. 13). Nevertheless he had only been partially obedient. God views incomplete obedience as disobedience (v. 19). Rather than confessing his sin Saul sought to justify his disobedience (v. 15; cf. Gen. 3:12; Exod. 32:22-23). He believed it was for a worthy purpose. Samuel had earlier delivered a message of doom to Eli in the morning (3:15-18); now he delivered one to Saul on another morning (v. 16).

"There is in all of us an inclination to resent being told what to do; but those in positions of authority and power are all the more reluctant to acknowledge anyone else's superior authority."¹⁵²

Since Saul returned to Gilgal to offer sacrifices, it is possible that this was the site of the tabernacle (vv. 12, 15; cf. 10:8; 13:8-10). It was where the Israelites had pitched the

¹⁵⁰Youngblood, p. 673. On the problem of God's goodness and His severe treatment of sinners—and even their animals—in the Old Testament, see Peter C. Craigie, *The Problem of War in the Old Testament*; and John W. Wenham, *The Enigma of Evil: Can We Believe in the Goodness of God?*

¹⁵¹F. Charles Fensham, "Did a Treaty Between the Israelites and the Kenites Exist?" *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 175 (October 1964):51-54.

¹⁵²David Payne, pp. 77-78.

tabernacle first in Canaan after they crossed the Jordan River in Joshua's day (Josh. 4:19). On the other hand, the Israelites offered sacrifices at places other than the tabernacle after they entered the Promised Land. We cannot say for sure that Saul went to Gilgal because the tabernacle was there.

Saul had formerly been genuinely humble. He had realistically evaluated himself before his anointing (v. 17; cf. 9:21). Yet when he became king he viewed himself as the ultimate authority in Israel. This attitude led him to disobey the Law of God. God had sent Saul on a mission (v. 18; cf. Matt. 28:19-20), which involved the total extermination of the Amalekites. The Hebrew word translated "sinners" means habitually wicked people (cf. Ps. 1:1, 5), like the Canaanites.

"That Haman the 'Agagite' (Esth 3:1, 10; 8:3, 5; 9:24) was an Amalekite is taken for granted by Josephus, who states that Haman's determination to destroy all the Jews in Persia was in retaliation for Israel's previous destruction of all his ancestors (Antiq. XI, 211 [vi.5])."¹⁵³

If Josephus was correct, Saul's total obedience to God would have precluded Haman's attempt to annihilate the Jews in Esther's day.

Saul persisted in calling partial obedience total obedience (v. 20). He again lay responsibility for sparing some of the spoils taken in the battle on the people (v. 21), but as king he was responsible for the people's actions. Saul sometimes took too much responsibility on himself and at other times too little. He tried to justify his actions by claiming that he did what he had done to honor God. He betrayed his lack of allegiance by referring to Yahweh as "your" God, not "our" God or "my" God, twice (cf. v. 30).

Samuel spoke what the writer recorded in verses 22 and 23 in poetic form indicating to all that God had inspired what he was saying. God frequently communicated oracles through the prophets in such exalted speech (cf. Gen. 49; Deut. 33; et al.). These classic verses prioritize total obedience and worship ritual for all time. God desires reality above ritual. Sacrificing things to God is good, but obedience is "better" because it involves sacrificing ourselves to Him. The spared animals Saul offered to God were voluntary sacrifices.

"The issue here is not a question of either/or but of both/and. Practically speaking, this means that sacrifice must be offered to the Lord on his terms, not ours."¹⁵⁴

What is the difference between obedience and sacrifice? Sacrifice is one aspect of obedience, but obedience involves more than just sacrifice. We should never think that we can compensate for our lack of obedience to some of God's will by making other sacrifices for Him. Suppose one Saturday morning a father asks his teenage son to mow

¹⁵³Youngblood, p. 674. However there is good reason to believe that Agag was the name of an area in Media that had become part of the Persian Empire. See Archer, p. 421.

¹⁵⁴Youngblood, p. 677.

the lawn for him since he has to work that Saturday and cannot do it himself. Company is coming and he wants it to look good. The son decides that his dad's car needs washing more than the grass needs cutting. Besides the boy plans to use the car on a date that night. When the father comes home, he finds that his son has not cut the grass. "I decided to wash your car instead," the boy explains. "Aren't you pleased with me?" His father replies, "I appreciate your washing the car, but that is not what I asked you to do. I would have preferred that you mow the lawn as I told you."

The failure of Israel's king to follow his Commander-in-chief's orders was much more serious than the son's disobedience in the illustration above. Departure from God's will (rebellion) presumes to control the future course of events, as divination does (v. 23). Failure to carry out God's will (insubordination) is wicked (iniquity) and puts the insubordinate person in God's place. This is a form of idolatry. God would now begin to terminate Saul's rule as Israel's king (v. 23; cf. Exod. 34:7). Previously God had told him that his kingdom (dynasty) would not endure (13:14).

"Saul's loss of kingship and kingdom are irrevocable; the rest of 1 Samuel details how in fact he does lose it all."¹⁵⁵

Saul's confession was superficial. The Hebrew word translated "transgressed" (*abarti*) means "overlooked." Saul only admitted that he had overlooked some small and relatively unimportant part of what God had commanded (v. 24). What God called rebellion Saul called an oversight. Saul's greater sin was putting himself in God's place. He was guilty of a kind of treason, namely, trying to usurp the ultimate authority in Israel. Samuel refused to accompany Saul because Saul had refused to accompany God (v. 26).

"Most of us like to think that however serious our disobedience, once we repent of that sin, we are forgiven and experience no real loss. The Scripture teaches that genuine repentance always meets forgiveness, but it does not teach that there are no losses. Actually, every reflective Christian knows of permanent losses that are the result of our failure to live up to God's ideals for our lives."¹⁵⁶

When Saul seized Samuel's robe, he was making an earnest appeal. The phrase "to grasp the hem" was a common idiomatic expression in Semitic languages that pictured a gesture of supplication.¹⁵⁷ Later David would cut off the hem of Saul's robe in a cave while the king slept (24:4). Since the hem of a garment identified the social status of the person who wore it,¹⁵⁸ David was symbolically picturing the transfer of royal authority from Saul to himself when he did this. When Saul tore Samuel's hem, he symbolically

¹⁵⁵Peter D. Miscall, *1 Samuel: A Literary Reading*, p. 98.

¹⁵⁶Chafin, p. 130.

¹⁵⁷Edward L. Greenstein, "'To Grasp the Hem' in Ugaritic Literature," *Vetus Testamentum* 32:2 (April 1982):217. See also Ronald A. Brauner, "'To Grasp the Hem' and 1 Samuel 15:27," *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 6 (1974):135-38.

¹⁵⁸See Jacob Milgrom, "Of Hems and Tassels," *Biblical Archaeology Review* 9:3 (May-June 1983):61-65.

though unintentionally seized the prophet's authority inappropriately. Samuel interpreted his action as symbolizing the wrenching of the kingdom from Saul (cf. 1 Kings 11:29-33).

Verse 29 poses a problem in the light of other passages that say God changed His mind (e.g., Exod. 32:14; Num. 14:12, 20). What did Samuel mean? I believe he meant that God is not fickle.¹⁵⁹ God does sometimes change His mind in response to the prayers of His people or when they repent (cf. Jer. 18:7-10; 1 John 1:9).¹⁶⁰ However when He determines to do something, He follows through (cf. Jer. 14:11-12). God is initially open to changing His mind about how He will deal with people, but He does not remain open forever. He is patient with people, but His patience has its limit (2 Pet. 3:9-10). God allows people time to make their choices, but then He holds them responsible for those choices.

"When God issues a decree that is plainly intended as irrevocable, as in the rejection of Saul, then, says our text, there is no possibility of that decree being rescinded (cf. Nu. 23:19)."¹⁶¹

Saul had established a long record of rebellious behavior. God knew that Saul's confession was not genuine and his repentance was not real. Saul may have thought that he could "con" God, but He could not. He behaved toward God as a manipulative child deals with his or her parents. Rather than having a heart to please God, as David did, Saul only obeyed God when he felt that it was to his advantage to do so. He wanted to maintain control and to receive the glory. Samuel reminded the king that Yahweh was the "Glory of Israel." Saul may have been bowing down in repentance in Samuel's presence, though the text does not say that, but he was standing up inside. It was that unbending resistance to God's complete will that made Saul unusable as Israel's king.

"Saul, as this chapter in particular would have us understand, was a man in contention with Yahweh in a way that David, for all his lurid sins, never was."¹⁶²

Saul's unyieldedness was an even more serious sin than David's sins of murder and adultery. God did not remove the kingship from David for his sins, but He did from Saul.

"To be king in Israel was . . . quite a different matter from being king in the countries round about. Saul did not understand this distinction, and resented Samuel's 'interference,' whereas David appreciated the point that the Lord his God was the focus of authority, and therefore he was willing to submit to the word of his prophet even though, in the eyes of the

¹⁵⁹See Walter C. Kaiser Jr., *Toward Old Testament Ethics*, p. 250.

¹⁶⁰For a fuller discussion of this subject, see Thomas L. Constable, "What Prayer Will and Will Not Change," in *Essays in Honor of J. Dwight Pentecost*, pp. 105-6; Robert B. Chisholm Jr., "Does God 'Change His Mind?'" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 152:608 (October-December 1995):387-99; idem, "Does God Deceive?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 155:617 (January-March 1998):11-28.

¹⁶¹Gordon, p. 146.

¹⁶²*Ibid.*, p. 142.

watching world, it must have seemed that David's own authority would thereby be weakened. Here lay the crucial distinction between Saul and David. The man after God's own heart submitted to God's word, obeyed his prophets, and found acceptance and forgiveness, despite his many glaring faults and failures. Saul obstinately clung to his rights as king, but lost his throne."¹⁶³

Perhaps Samuel consented to honor Saul by worshipping with him (vv. 30-31) because Saul was still the king. It was good that Saul wanted to honor Yahweh in the eyes of the people by worshipping Him. Perhaps Saul's sincere though shallow contrition moved Samuel to be more cooperative (cf. v. 26).¹⁶⁴ Note Saul's continuing obsession with external appearances.

Samuel proceeded to obey God, as Saul should have, by slaying Agag (vv. 32-33). The departure of Samuel and Saul to their respective hometowns pictures them going their own separate ways. They had little in common since their allegiance to Yahweh was quite different, so they saw nothing more of each other (v. 35).¹⁶⁵ Saul's attitude toward Yahweh and its resultant judgment grieved the prophet who felt, as God, sorrow over the king's fate (15:35; 16:1). God has feelings about our responses to Him. He is not a machine but a Person. God regretted that He had made Saul king because of Saul's decisions, not because God thought He had made a mistake by choosing Saul. Note that God regretted that He had made Saul king, not that He had made Saul one of His children. Saul did not lose his salvation because he failed to obey God completely, but he did lose his opportunity to serve God by ruling over God's people (cf. Prov. 25:19).¹⁶⁶

Chapters 12—15 present the negative side of Saul's character whereas chapters 8-11 emphasize Saul's positive traits. The writer structured these sections parallel to each other to make the contrast striking.

The motif of fertility continues as the major theological emphasis in this section of 1 Samuel (chs. 7—15). Samuel, the innocent and obedient servant of the Lord, won the privilege of communicating God's Word by his faithful commitment to God. Saul, the ideal Israelite who personified the hopes and ambitions of Israel, lost his privilege of leading God's people because he was unfaithful to God.

"Saul was an impetuous person who wanted to take matters into his own hands rather than trusting the Lord. He had the opposite of the proper covenant mentality. His sin was so serious that there could be no atonement for it. This is similar to Eli's sons, for whose sins no atonement

¹⁶³Baldwin, p. 35. Remember this observation when you read about God pardoning David's gross sins in 2 Samuel.

¹⁶⁴Most of the commentators believed Samuel did not sin in returning with Saul. For the reasons of one writer who thought he did, see Peter N. Greenhow, "Did Samuel Sin?" *Grace Journal* 11:2 (1970):34-40.

¹⁶⁵See David M. Gunn, *The Fate of King Saul: An Interpretation of a Biblical Story*, p. 147.

¹⁶⁶See Terence E. Fretheim, "Divine Foreknowledge, Divine Constancy, and the Rejection of Saul's Kingship," *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 47:4 (October 1985):597.

was available. Their sin resulted in a change of order, from Eli to Samuel. In Saul's case the change in order was from Saul to David."¹⁶⁷

The writer recorded four more conflicts and reversals of fortune in chapters 7—15: the Philistines and Samuel (7:2-17), the Ammonites and Saul (chs. 8—11), Saul and Jonathan (12:1—14:46), and Saul and Samuel (14:47—15:35). In the first two sections God's two anointed servants, Samuel and Saul, defeated Israel's external enemies by depending on God. They both gave God the credit for their victories (7:12; 11:13-15). In the third and fourth sections, because Saul refused to obey God and to acknowledge His victory, Saul replaced the external enemies of Israel as the object of God and Samuel's anger. Jonathan became Israel's deliverer when his father failed. The son understood the spiritual significance of events to which the father was blind.

IV. SAUL AND DAVID 1 SAM. 16—31

The basic theme in Samuel, that blessing, and in particular fertility of all kinds, follows from faithful commitment to God's revealed will, continues in this section. However another major motif now becomes more prominent. We might call it the theme of the Lord's anointed.

"The theological thread running through Samuel and Kings is God's choice of a leader to represent Him as He implements His covenants with Israel."¹⁶⁸

Saul had been God's anointed vice-regent, but with Saul's rejection David began to move into that position. These chapters record the gradual transition and slow transformation of the nation as the Israelites and others increasingly realized that David was now God's anointed. Saul remained the Lord's anointed as long as he lived. Part of the reason David succeeded was he recognized this and related to Saul accordingly. However, David too was God's anointed though God was still preparing him to take leadership and mount the throne. While the hero of this last half of 1 Samuel is David, Saul is also prominent. Saul declined as the old anointed as David arose as the new anointed.

"There will be many twists in the story of David's progress towards the throne, and not a few crisis-points, yet all is told in the knowledge that God can put his men where he wants them to be, whether the route is direct, or ever so circuitous."¹⁶⁹

¹⁶⁷Martin, p. 35.

¹⁶⁸Heater, p. 117.

¹⁶⁹Gordon, p. 150.

| CHRONOLOGY OF DAVID'S LIFE¹⁷⁰ | | | |
|---|-------------|------------|-------------------|
| Event | Date | Age | Reference |
| Birth | 1041 | 0 | 2 Sam. 5:4-5 |
| Anointing by Samuel | 1029 | 12 | 1 Sam. 16:1-13 |
| Defeat of Goliath | 1024 | 17 | 1 Sam. 17 |
| Exile from Saul | 1020-1011 | 21-30 | 1 Sam. 21—31 |
| Anointing as King over Judah | 1011 | 30 | 2 Sam. 2:1-4 |
| Anointing as King over all Israel | 1004 | 37 | 2 Sam. 5:1-3 |
| Philistines Wars | 1004 | 37 | 2 Sam. 5:17-25 |
| Conquest of Jerusalem | 1004 | 37 | 2 Sam. 5:6-10 |
| Mephibosheth's Move to Jerusalem | 996 | 45 | 2 Sam. 9:1-13 |
| The Three Year Famine | 996-993 | 45-48 | 2 Sam. 21:1-14 |
| The Ammonite Wars | 993-990 | 48-51 | 2 Sam. 10—12 |
| Adultery and Murder | 992 | 49 | 2 Sam. 11 |
| Birth of Solomon | 991 | 50 | 2 Sam. 12:24-25 |
| Rape of Tamar | 987 | 54 | 2 Sam. 13:1-22 |
| Death of Amnon | 985 | 56 | 2 Sam. 13:23-36 |
| Exile of Absalom | 985-982 | 56-59 | 2 Sam. 13:37-39 |
| Absalom's Return to Jerusalem | 982-980 | 59-61 | 2 Sam. 14:21-24 |
| Construction of Palace | 980-978 | 61-63 | 1 Chron. 15:1 |
| Construction of Tabernacle | 977 | 64 | 1 Chron. 15:1 |
| Move of Ark to Jerusalem | 977 | 64 | 2 Sam. 6:12-19 |
| Absalom's Rebellion and David's Exile | 976 | 65 | 2 Sam. 15—18 |
| Rebellion of Sheba | 976 | 65 | 2 Sam. 20:1-22 |
| The Census | 975 | 66 | 2 Sam. 24:1-17 |
| Purchase of Temple Site | 973 | 68 | 2 Sam. 24:18-25 |
| The Davidic Covenant | 973 | 68 | 2 Sam. 7 |
| Co-regency with Solomon | 973-971 | 68-70 | 1 Chron. 23:1 |
| Rebellion of Adonijah | 972 | 69 | 1 Kings 1:5-37 |
| Coronation of Solomon | 971 | 70 | 1 Chron. 29:22-23 |
| Death | 971 | 70 | 1 Kings 2:10-11 |

A. DAVID'S RISE AS THE NEW ANOINTED 16:1—18:5

According to Swindoll, more was written in the Bible about David than about any other character—66 chapters plus 59 references to his life in the New Testament.¹⁷¹ This large amount of material reflects his great importance for Bible readers.

¹⁷⁰Based on Merrill, *Kingdom of . . .*, p. 244.

¹⁷¹Charles R. Swindoll, *David: A Man of Passion and Destiny*, p. 4.

1. God's selection of David for kingship ch. 16

"One of the many indications that the two halves (vv. 1-13, 14-23) of chapter 16 are closely related is that each section is framed by an *inclusio*: 'Horn with/of oil' is found in vv. 1 and 13, and the phrase 'Spirit . . . departed from' constitutes the first words of v. 14 and the last words of v. 23 . . ." ¹⁷²

David's anointing 16:1-13

This time God's choice was not a king for the people according to their desires, but a king for Himself (v. 1) who would put Yahweh first (13:14; cf. Gal. 4:4-5). Saul would have perceived Samuel's anointing another man as king as an act of treason (v. 2). He showed more concern for his own interests than for the will of God. Evidently Samuel had gained a reputation as an executioner when he had killed Agag (v. 4; cf. 15:33).

Samuel judged Jesse's sons by their external qualities just as the Israelites judged Saul acceptable because of those characteristics (v. 6). Verse 7 clarifies how God evaluates people, namely, on the basis of their hearts (affections), not their appearance or abilities (cf. Matt. 3:17; Mark 10:31; 1 Cor. 1:27). As He had done earlier in Scriptural history, God chose the son that was not the natural choice showing that He does not bind Himself to what is traditional. It is unusual that Jesse did not have David present for Samuel's inspection since he too was one of his sons. This may suggest that Jesse did not think as highly of David as he did of his other sons (cf. Ps. 27:10, where David wrote of his parents forsaking him). Was David a neglected or even an abused child that his father viewed more as hired help than as a son?

"It's remarkable, isn't it, how Jesse reveals two very common mistakes parents make. Number one, he didn't have an equal appreciation for all of his children. And number two, he failed to cultivate a mutual self-respect among them. Jesse saw his youngest as nothing more than the one who tended the sheep." ¹⁷³

"The shepherd/flock image is a kind of *Leitmotif* for David from this point on. . . . The book's last story shows David deeply concerned for the flock [2 Sam. 24:17]." ¹⁷⁴

David (probably meaning "beloved of the Lord") was physically attractive (v. 12; cf. Isa. 53:2). Nevertheless God did not choose him for that reason but because of God's sovereign election and because of David's heart attitude. ¹⁷⁵

¹⁷²Youngblood, p. 682.

¹⁷³Swindoll, p. 20.

¹⁷⁴S. D. Walters, "The Light and the Dark," in *Ascribe to the Lord: Biblical and Other Studies in Memory of Peter C. Craigie*, p. 574, n. 17. A *leitmotif*, literally a leading or guiding motive, is a phrase or image representing and recurring with a given character, situation, or emotion in a piece of literature or music.

¹⁷⁵God's sovereign election to salvation does not depend on human initiative (Rom. 9:16), by His sovereign election to service does (1 Tim. 1:12).

"What does it mean to be a person after God's own heart? Seems to me, it means that you are a person whose life is in harmony with the Lord. What is important to Him is important to you. What burdens Him burdens you. When He says, 'God to the right,' you go to the right. When He says, 'Stop that in your life,' you stop it. When He says, 'This is wrong and I want you to change,' you come to terms with it because you have a heart for God."¹⁷⁶

David and his family were the first after Samuel to learn that he would be the next king. In time all Israel would learn this as David became the instrument through whom God blessed the nation. He became successful because God's Spirit came on David, remained with him from then on, and empowered him for service (cf. Matt. 3:16-17).¹⁷⁷

Verse 13 records Samuel's departure for his home in Ramah. At this point in the book he becomes a minor figure who no longer plays an active role in the progress of events. His anointing of David, therefore, was the climax and capstone of his career.

David's introduction to the royal court 16:14-23

"In addition to being the middle chapter of 1 Samuel, chapter 16 is pivotal in another way as well: Its first half (vv. 1-13), ending with a statement concerning David's reception of the Spirit of God, describes David's anointing as ruler of Israel to replace Saul; its second half (vv. 14-23), beginning with a statement concerning Saul's loss of the Spirit and its replacement with an 'evil spirit' sent by God, describes David's arrival in the court of Saul. Thus the juxtaposition of vv. 13 and 14 delineates not only the transfer of the divine blessing and empowerment from Saul to David but also the beginning of the effective displacement of Saul by David as king of Israel. The transition at vv. 13-14 can thus be arguably defined as the literary, historical, and theological crux of 1 Samuel as a whole."¹⁷⁸

Verse 14 describes God's relationship to Saul following the Lord's rejection of him. Yahweh had less and less contact with His faithless representative. His empowering Spirit left him without the divine enablement that he had once enjoyed (cf. Judg. 9:23; 16:20; 1 Kings 22:21-23; Ps. 51:11).

"When YHWH's Spirit came upon David his anointer [Samuel] left, leaving him in good hands. When YHWH's Spirit left Saul an evil spirit came upon him, leaving him in dire straits."¹⁷⁹

¹⁷⁶Swindoll, p. 6.

¹⁷⁷On the significance of anointing, see my comments on 10:1.

¹⁷⁸Youngblood, p. 682.

¹⁷⁹David M. Howard Jr., "The Transfer of Power From Saul to David in 1 Sam 16:13-14," *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 32:4 (1989):481.

The evil spirit that Yahweh permitted to trouble Saul has been the subject of considerable interest among Bible students. It may have been a spirit of discontent (cf. Judg. 9:23), a demon who afflicted him periodically (cf. 1 Kings 22:20-23), or a demon who indwelt him from then on.¹⁸⁰ In any case it was a discipline for departing from God. When people depart from God, their troubles really begin.

"Saul's evil bent was by the permission and plan of God. We must realize that in the last analysis all penal consequences come from God, as the Author of the moral law and the one who always does what is right."¹⁸¹

The writer mentioned Saul's fits of terror to explain, in addition to his deteriorating mental state, why Saul called for a musician and how David gained access to the royal court. It is tempting to suggest that Saul's mental problems may have resulted from his spiritual rebellion, which is common, but the text does not state that connection outright. Apparently some people already regarded David as a mighty man of valor and a warrior (v. 18) because he had single-handedly defeated lions and bears (17:34-35). Most important, the Lord was with David.¹⁸² The fact that Jesse could provide a donkey suggests that he was fairly prosperous since this is how the more wealthy classes travelled in Israel (v. 20). Yet David's family was not outstanding in Israel (cf. 18:18).

Initially Saul loved David greatly, as Jonathan did (cf. 18:1, 3; 20:17). However, Saul's attitude would change. The king appointed an armorbearer to that position because of his courage, his ability to handle weapons, and his ability to get along with the king. David was probably a teenager at this time since he was 30 when he began to reign (2 Sam. 5:4). He was not Saul's bodyguard. He just helped the king handle his armor. Whatever kind of spirit afflicted Saul, David's sweet music reduced its ill effects. Saul was becoming dependent on the one who would replace him.

God was elevating David from the ranks of a shepherd of sheep (v. 11) to become the shepherd of His people, and David's musical ability (v. 18) enabled him to lead the Israelites in the worship of Yahweh later.

"This story of how David first met Saul and how he came to the royal court makes two points. The first is that David did not engineer it. David was no ruthlessly ambitious man, determined to rise up the social ladder—any more than Saul himself had been (cp. chapter 9). David's hands were clean. The second point is that God overruled to bring David to court, through the sheer chance (as it seemed) that one of Saul's courtiers knew something about him and brought him to Saul's attention [cf. Joseph]. So it

¹⁸⁰John Davis and John Whitcomb, *A History of Israel*, p. 224.

¹⁸¹Gleason L. Archer Jr., *Encyclopedia of Bible Difficulties*, p. 180.

¹⁸²Walters, pp. 570-71, and Gordon, p. 160, identified the Lord being with David as another *leitmotif* for David (cf. 17:37; 18:12, 14, 28; 2 Sam. 5:10).

was God, not David, who was responsible for the young man's first steps towards the throne."¹⁸³

2. The reason for God's selection of David ch. 17

The exciting story of David and Goliath illustrates what it was that God saw in David's heart that led Him to choose David for the position of king. It also shows how and why others in Israel began to notice David. David fought the Lord's battles as Samuel did (ch. 7). He also did so as Saul, God's previously anointed king, had done (chs. 10—11, 14—15).

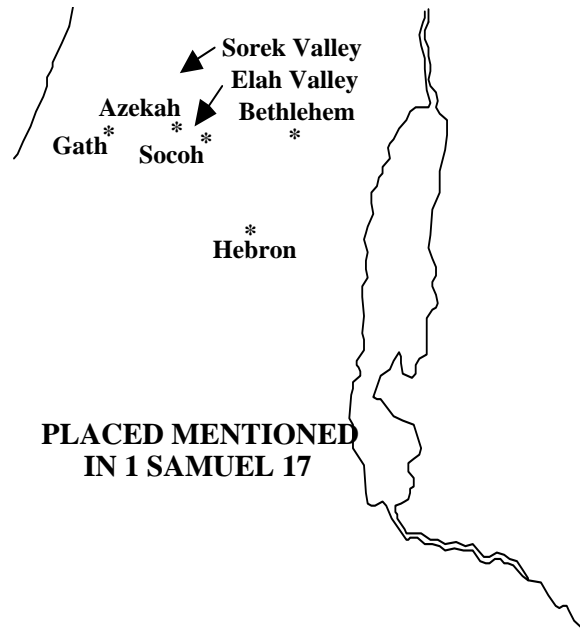
Saul's defeat of the Ammonites (11:1-11) followed Saul's anointing (10:1). Similarly David's defeat of the Philistines (ch. 17) follows the record of his anointing (16:13). Both victories demonstrate God's blessing on His newly anointed leaders.

The Philistine challenge 17:1-11

The Elah Valley is an S-shaped valley just south of the Sorek Valley. It runs east and west parallel to it. Socoh stood to the east and Azekah to the west. Archaeologists have not yet located Ephes-dammim. Gath was 7 miles to the west and was the closest Philistine town.

Goliath was 9 feet 9 inches tall. He was probably a descendant of the Anakim who had moved to Philistia after Joshua drove them out of Hebron (Josh. 11:21-22). Five thousand shekels weight equal 125 pounds (v. 5). Goliath's spear head weighed 15 pounds (v. 7), about the weight of a standard shot put. This is an unusually long description of an individual for the Old Testament. The writer evidently wanted to impress Goliath's awesome power and apparent invulnerability on the readers so we would appreciate David's great courage and faith.

The Philistines proposed a battle in which two representative champions from Israel and Philistia would duel it out, a not uncommon method of limiting war in the ancient world (cf. 2 Sam. 2).¹⁸⁴ However the Israelites had no one who could compete with Goliath physically. That was the only dimension to the conflict that Saul and his generals saw.



¹⁸³David Payne, p. 85.

¹⁸⁴Harry A. Hoffner Jr., "A Hittite Analogue to the David and Goliath Contest of Champions?" *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 30 (1968):220. See also George I. Mavrodes, "David, Goliath, and Limited War," *Reformed Journal* 33:8 (1983):6-8.

Since Saul was the tallest Israelite and the king, he was the natural choice for an opponent. However as earlier (14:1-2), Saul was staying in the background when he should have been leading the people.

The reason for David's presence at the battle 17:12-25

At this time in his life David was assisting Saul as his armorbearer when he was not tending his father's sheep (v. 15). Moses too had been tending sheep before God called him to shepherd His people Israel (Exod. 3:1). The site of battle was 15 miles due west of David's hometown, Bethlehem. The Old Testament sometimes used "Ephratah" (v. 12), an older name for Bethlehem, to distinguish the Bethlehem in Judah from the one in Zebulun. David journeyed to the battle site to bring food (including cheeseburgers? v. 18) to his brothers and their fellow soldiers and to collect news to bring back to his father.¹⁸⁵ Little did Jesse expect that the news David would bring back home was that he had slain Goliath and that the Israelites had routed the Philistines. The battle had been a stand-off for 40 days (v. 16). The number 40 often represents a period of testing in the Bible (cf. the Israelites' testing in the wilderness for 40 years, Jesus' testing for 40 days, etc.). This was another test for Israel. Would the nation trust in the arm of the flesh or in God?

Part of the reward for defeating Goliath that Saul had promised was that the victor's family would be tax free in Israel (v. 25).¹⁸⁶ The giving of the leader's daughter in marriage to a valiant warrior was not without precedent in Israel (cf. Caleb's challenge in Josh. 15:16).

David's interest in God's reputation 17:26-30

David seems to have considered himself capable of defeating Goliath from the first time he heard of Goliath's insults to Yahweh. The fact that he referred to Yahweh as the "living God" (v. 26) shows David's belief that Yahweh was still the same Person who could defeat present enemies as He had done in the past. His was the simple faith of a child. He had apparently heard about God's promises to Moses and Joshua that if the Israelites would attack their enemies God would defeat them (Deut. 31:1-8; Josh. 1:1-9). Faith in God always rests on a word from God in Scripture. Most of the Israelites took Goliath's challenge as defying Israel (v. 25), but David interpreted it as defying the living God, the only true God (v. 26). Here David's heart for God begins to manifest itself (cf. 16:7).

"Eliab sought for the splinter in his brother's eye, and was not aware of the beam in his own. The very things with which he charged his brother—presumption and wickedness of heart—were most apparent in his scornful reproof."¹⁸⁷

¹⁸⁵Compare the similar events in young Joseph's life who was also anointed in the midst of his brothers and then went on an errand to find his brothers only to experience a life-changing encounter.

¹⁸⁶McCarter, p. 304; Shemaryahu Talmon, *King, Cult, and Calendar in Ancient Israel: Collected Studies*, pp. 65-66.

¹⁸⁷Keil and Delitzsch, p. 181.

"Eliab's anger is the anger of a man who feels small because of the Israelite army's inability to deal with Goliath, and he particularly resents looking small in the eyes of his young brother [whom Samuel had anointed king-elect instead of himself]."¹⁸⁸

David continued to inquire about the prize for slaying Goliath, probably to make sure he understood what he would risk his life to obtain.

David's qualifications to fight Goliath 17:31-40

When David volunteered to be Israel's champion, Saul scoffed at him because he evaluated David's chances for success solely in physical terms, as usual. The Hebrew word *na'ar* translated "youth" (v. 33) describes an older teenager (cf. 3:1).

"The opposite of the fear of the Lord is the fear of man. No greater contrast of these opposing fears could be presented than when David confronted Goliath. Saul and his men feared Goliath the man, but David by virtue of his fear of Yahweh did not."¹⁸⁹

David responded that if that was the criterion Saul wanted to use he had already defeated two formidable beasts (v. 34). However, David's real confidence lay in the fact that Goliath had set himself against the living God (v. 36). David viewed Goliath as just another predator that was threatening the safety of God's flock, Israel, and the reputation of Israel's God.¹⁹⁰ He gave credit to God for allowing him to kill the lion and the bear (v. 37). The same faith in Yahweh had inspired Jonathan's deed of valor (14:6). Saul again showed that he trusted in material things for success by arming David as he did (v. 38).¹⁹¹ David preferred the simple weapon that he could handle best (v. 40).

"Nothing comes more naturally to people than trying to get someone to fight our battles the way we would were we fighting them."¹⁹²

Some students of this passage have suggested that David chose five stones because Goliath had four brother's and he wanted to be ready to attack them too. However there is no indication in the text that David had any concern for them or even that they were present at this battle. He probably chose five stones simply so he would have some in reserve if his first shot missed its mark.

The sling David used was not the toy catapult with which children play, namely, a slingshot. It was an ancient offensive weapon that shepherds also used to control their

¹⁸⁸Gordon, p. 156.

¹⁸⁹Homer Heater Jr., "Young David and the Practice of Wisdom," in *Integrity of Heart, Skillfulness of Hands*, p. 53.

¹⁹⁰See T. A. Boogaart, "History and Drama in the Story of David and Goliath," *Reformed Review* 38 (1985):209.

¹⁹¹Gordon, p. 157, wrote that Saul tried to turn David into an armadillo.

¹⁹²Chafin, p. 145.

sheep. Shepherds usually made a sling out of a long thin strip of leather and formed a pouch in its middle. Talented slingers could propel small objects hundreds of feet at very high speeds with great accuracy (cf. Judg. 20:16).¹⁹³ Pictures of slings and stones from this time show the stones typically being from two to three inches in diameter.¹⁹⁴ Probably David's stones were about the size of a modern baseball or even larger. David beat Goliath, not with the weapons of a warrior, but with the tools of a shepherd.¹⁹⁵

David's victory by faith 17:41-49

Goliath disdained David because the lad had no battle scars; he was not a warrior at all but simply a fresh-faced boy (v. 42). Goliath assumed that he would win because his physical power and armaments were superior. As often, pride preceded his fall (Prov. 16:18).

Verses 45-47 give the clearest expression to David's faith in Yahweh. He viewed Yahweh as the commander of Israel's armies, a view of God that Saul never accepted but which made the difference between Saul's failure and David's success as the Lord's anointed (v. 45). He also saw God as the real deliverer of Israel (v. 46). Furthermore David was jealous for the reputation of God (v. 47), not his own glory, which so preoccupied Saul. His faith must have rested on God's promises concerning victory against the enemies of God's people for confidence in Himself and obedience to His word (Gen. 12:3; Deut. 31:1-8; Josh. 1:1-9).

"Intimidation. That's our MAJOR battle when we face giants. When they intimidate us, we get tongue-tied. Our thoughts get confused. We forget how to pray. We focus on the odds against us. We forget whom we represent, and we stand there with our knees knocking. I wonder what God must think, when all the while He has promised us, 'My power is available. There's no one on this earth greater. *You trust Me.*' . . .

"David lived by a very simple principle: *nothing to prove, nothing to lose.* He didn't try to impress anybody in the army of Israel. He didn't try to impress his brothers. He didn't even try to impress God. He just ran to meet Goliath."¹⁹⁶

The results of David's victory 17:50-58

God used a humble weapon to give His people a great victory in response to one person's faith. This is another instance of God bringing blessing to and through a person who committed himself to simply believing and obeying God's Word (cf. 14:1). Stoning was

¹⁹³Unger's Bible Dictionary, s.v. "Armor."

¹⁹⁴See Ovid R. Sellers, "Sling Stones in Biblical Times," *Biblical Archaeologist* 2:4 (1939):41-42, 44.

¹⁹⁵Critics of the Bible have tried to prove that David did not really kill Goliath as the Bible says. Norvelle Wallace Sharpe, "David, Elhanan, and the Literary Digest," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 86 (July 1929):319-26, rebutted such an attempt.

¹⁹⁶Swindoll, p. 46.

the penalty for blasphemy in Israel (Lev. 24:16; Deut. 17:7). Usually death by stoning required many large stones, but David executed this Philistine blasphemer with only one stone. God's unseen hand propelled and directed it. One small stone was all God needed to get what He wanted done.

The stone that hit Goliath in the forehead evidently only knocked him out. David then approached the fallen giant, slew him with his own sword, and cut off his head.¹⁹⁷ Verse 50 seems to be a summary of the whole encounter. Verses 49 and 51 apparently describe what happened blow by blow. By cutting off Goliath's head David completed the execution of the giant and demonstrated to everyone present that he really was dead. Like the image of Dagon, that had previously fallen before the ark and had its head broken off (5:4), so Dagon's champion now suffered the same fate.

The Israelites chased the fleeing Philistines back home to their towns. The towns mentioned stood to the north and northwest of the battlefield (v. 52). David took Goliath's head as a trophy of war to Jerusalem and put the giant's weapons in his own tent temporarily (v. 54). They became memorials of God's great deliverance on this occasion. It is unclear whether David took the giant's head to Jerusalem, which was still a Jebusite city, immediately or if he took it there later when David captured Jerusalem and made it his capital. Goliath's sword eventually went to Nob near Jerusalem (21:1-9). The central sanctuary may have stood there even at this time.

Saul needed to know the name of David's father to deliver the prize that he had promised to anyone who would defeat Goliath (v. 25). Perhaps he had never asked David about this before or had forgotten whose son he was. Another explanation of Saul's strange ignorance is that the events of chapter 17 may have been chronologically before those of chapter 16. Another possibility is that Saul's words could have been an idiom for, "What is his background?" Perhaps the writer included this reference to David's family in the text because David's trust and obedience resulted in his family enjoying special blessings from God through Saul. Verses 55-58 focus on the question of whose son David was. This event proved that David was a true son of God who had the reputation and interests of his Father and his Father's people at heart.

David emerges as superior to Saul as well as Goliath in this story. We have already seen that Yahweh was superior to Dagon (chs. 4—6). David's victory over Goliath was a major step toward Israel's throne for him. It was a turning point in his life. God did not base David's election for salvation on David's conduct. God chooses whom He will to save. However, God did choose David to serve as Israel's king because of David's conduct, which resulted from his devoted heart. God promotes the faithful to higher positions of service (cf. Luke 19:12-27).

"His victory that day in the valley of Elah made a national hero of him, as well as entitling him to the hand of the king's daughter in marriage; but it

¹⁹⁷Baldwin, p. 128; Ariella Deem, "'And the Stone Sank Into His Forehead': A Note on 1 Samuel xvii 49," *Vetus Testamentum* 28:3 (1978):350.

also evoked jealous feelings in Saul, thus indirectly setting in motion the events which fill the rest of 1 Samuel."¹⁹⁸

In applying this story I believe it is legitimate to see Goliath as representing the many enemies that frustrate individual believers as we seek to live for God. However, I believe primarily the application deals with defeating those enemies bent on defeating and destroying God's people *en masse*. Contemporary movements designed to discredit God and remove Christianity from a land are what Goliath personifies.

We remember too that a great son of David arose who defeated another Goliath in His day, namely, Jesus Christ. While Satan is not yet dead, Jesus Christ has felled him. He has won a great victory over this enemy who was behind Goliath and is behind all the enemies of God and His people.

3. The results of God's selection of David 18:1-19:17

Earlier the writer narrated Saul's anointing, military success, and the popular reaction to him (chs. 10—11). Now he followed the same pattern by recording David's anointing, military success, and the popular reaction to him (16:1—19:17). The popular reaction to Saul was fairly simple: most of the people supported him, though a few opposed him (11:12-15). The popular reaction to David was much more complex and significant (18:1—19:17).

Jonathan's love for David 18:1-5

We have already seen that Jonathan was a man of faith and courage (14:1-15). Jonathan found a soul brother in David, a man who committed himself to trusting and obeying God as he did. This common purpose on the deepest level of life is what accounts for the love Jonathan and David shared for one another (v. 1).

Jonathan loved David as he loved himself (vv. 1, 3; cf. Lev. 19:18). He loved David, as he should have, since David had committed himself to glorifying God and fulfilling His will even at the expense of his personal safety. Some homosexuals have tried to use the writer's statements of Jonathan's love for David as support that their lifestyle has good biblical precedent.¹⁹⁹ However the Hebrew word *'ahab*, translated "love" here, nowhere else describes homosexual desire or activity. Rather when homosexual relations are in view the Holy Spirit used the word *yada*, translated "know" in the sense of "have sex with" (cf. Gen. 19:5; Judg. 19:22).

Saul responded to Jonathan's affection for David, and presumably David's bravery, by keeping David with him even more than the king had done previously (v. 2; cf. 14:52).

Evidently Jonathan realized David's gifts and God's will for David's life (cf. 23:17), and he humbly deferred to him (vv. 3-4).

¹⁹⁸Gordon, p. 153.

¹⁹⁹E.g., Tom Horner, *Jonathan Loved David: Homosexuality in Biblical Times*, pp. 20, 26-28, 31-39.

"This is a virtual abdication by Jonathan, the crown prince."²⁰⁰

The crown prince of Israel gives us one of the classic examples of self-humbling for the glory of God and the welfare of His people that we have in all of Scripture (cf. Phil. 2:5-8). Jonathan's humility is all the more remarkable since chronological references in Samuel seem to indicate that Jonathan was about 30 years older than David.²⁰¹ His response to David's anointing was appropriate, and it contrasts sharply with Saul's response, which follows.

". . . when Jonathan took off his robe (a symbol of the Israelite kingdom; cf. 15:27-28 . . .) and gave it to David (v. 4), he was in effect transferring his own status as heir apparent to him . . ."²⁰²

"The covenant of friendship referred to in verse 3 was a unilateral (binding on one party only) covenant in which Jonathan committed himself to David with complete disregard for self. The gift given by Jonathan served to ratify the covenant and honor David."²⁰³

Jonathan's selfless action reflects his submission to Samuel's oracle that Saul would not have a continuing dynasty (13:13-14). Rather than trying to perpetuate Saul's dynasty, as Abner later tried to do (2 Sam. 2:8-9), godly Jonathan turned over the symbols of the crown prince to David.

"In our political world, where power plays such an important role, what would be thought of a prince who voluntarily renounced his throne in favor of a friend whose character and godly faith he admired?"²⁰⁴

David's commitment to God resulted in his prospering (the fertility motif). David acted wisely, the literal meaning of the Hebrew word translated "prospered" (vv. 5, 14, 15), also because God was with him (vv. 12, 14; cf. 16:13). Not only did Jonathan love David, but all the people including even Saul's servants, those people who were most loyal to the king, did too (v. 5). God blesses personally those who relate to Him properly. They also become channels of blessing to others (cf. 2:30; Gen. 12:2).

Saul may or may not have known at this time that Samuel had anointed David. His growing jealousy seems to have mounted over David's increasing ability, success, and popularity with the people that resulted from God's help (grace).

²⁰⁰Gordon, p. 159.

²⁰¹See the chronological chart at the beginning of these notes.

²⁰²Youngblood, p. 707; cf. Gunn, p. 80.

²⁰³Laney, p. 61.

²⁰⁴Baldwin, p. 129.

David's popularity with the people 18:6-9

These verses show how David had captured the affection of many Israelites by his victory over Goliath. Successful military heroes still do so today. Notwithstanding David's popularity, not everyone was ready to join David's fan club as the text proceeds to clarify. He became a controversial figure in Israel. Apparently Saul suspected that with such popularity David might attempt to overthrow his government. However it was personal jealousy that took root in Saul's mind and led to his downfall.²⁰⁵ While David's actions pleased the people (v. 5), they displeased the king (v. 8). The problem was Saul's desire to be popular with the people more than being popular with God. Contrast humble John the Baptist who wanted Jesus to receive more honor than himself (John 1:26-27; 3:30).

Saul's first direct attempt to kill David 18:10-16

The evil spirit from the Lord (cf. 16:4, whatever it was) afflicted Saul the very next day. David and Saul each had something in their hand. David held a harp with which he sought to help the king by playing soothing music. Saul held a spear with which he sought to harm his helper. The writer stated the reason Saul attempted to pin David to the wall clearly in verse 12. God was with David, and He had withdrawn from Saul (cf. v. 14).

Saul's unchecked jealousy bred the symptoms of paranoia; he began to think that his most loyal subject was his mortal enemy. Contrast Jonathan's implicit confidence in David. The difference was that Saul saw David as a threat to his security whereas Jonathan saw him as the savior of God's people.²⁰⁶

"The writer H. G. Wells says of one of his strange characters, Mr. Polly, 'He was not so much a human being as a civil war.'²⁰⁷ I think that is a perfect description of Saul. He became a living civil war, miserable, possessed of an evil spirit, mentally breaking, a suspicious, angry, jealous man. As a result, he struck out against the most trusted and trustworthy servant in his camp—David."²⁰⁸

Next Saul sent David out from the palace, evidently so he would not be a constant aggravation to the king. Saul placed David, whom he had already appointed as his commander-in-chief (v. 5), over a large unit of soldiers in the field (v. 13).²⁰⁹ However, Saul's decision only gave David more exposure to the people and increased his popularity with them. When Saul observed what was happening, he dreaded David even more (v. 15), but the people of both Israel and Judah loved him even more (v. 16; cf. vv. 1, 3, 20). God was causing the wrath of Saul to praise Him, to contribute toward the fulfillment of

²⁰⁵The women's song did not intend to insult Saul. It is typical Hebrew parallelism in which both heroes received honor for slaying multitudes of Israel's enemies albeit David received the higher commendation.

²⁰⁶For a very interesting comparison of Saul, David, and Absalom that emphasizes David's submissive responses to his enemy's attacks, see Gene Edwards, *A Tale of Three Kings*.

²⁰⁷H. G. Wells, *The History of Mr. Polly*, p. 5.

²⁰⁸Swindoll, p. 60.

²⁰⁹The Hebrew word *elep* can mean either 1,000 or a military unit.

His plans. Verses 13 through 16 set the growing approval of the people and the mounting disapproval of Saul in vivid contrast.

Saul's indirect attempts to kill David 18:17-30

Since he had been unsuccessful in murdering David himself, Saul also tried to get other people to kill him (cf. 2 Sam. 11:15). Saul had promised his daughter in marriage to Goliath's victor (17:25). Nevertheless now Saul added the condition that David also had to fight more battles for his king. David, on the other hand, did not aspire to marry the king's daughter even though such a marriage would have advanced his career greatly (v. 18; cf. 16:18). He evidently dismissed this possibility since he could not afford the dowry (bridal price, v. 23). Saul went back on his promise to give David his older daughter, Merab, anyway (v. 19).

Michal, like her brother Jonathan, had come to love David (v. 20). Evidently Saul meant that Michal would become a snare to David (v. 21) because as the son-in-law of the king David would have been in line for the throne. This would have made David an even more important target for the Philistines in battle. This time Saul tried to break down David's humble resistance to becoming his son-in-law by sending servants (courtiers, leading men of the kingdom) to persuade him. They assured David that his lack of wealth would not be a problem. Normally grooms paid their prospective fathers-in-law a price to compensate for the loss of their daughter.²¹⁰ However, Saul was willing to take 100 uncircumcised Philistine foreskins instead. He probably thought that David would respond to the challenge and perhaps die in the encounter with the Philistines. Saul used Michal as the bait to lure David into what he thought would be a fatal encounter with the Philistines.

God protected David, however, and he was able to provide the king with twice as many foreskins as Saul had specified (v. 27).²¹¹ This time Saul gave him his daughter.²¹² Saul saw in these events evidence that Yahweh's blessing was with David (v. 28), and this made him even more fearful of him (v. 29). Ironically Saul from then on became David's enemy continually (v. 29) even though David had become his son-in-law as well as his faithful commander-in-chief and his effective field general. By setting himself against David, Saul was setting himself against God since David was the Lord's anointed (cf. Gen. 12:3).

"Saul's playing the part of a latter-day Laban (cf. Gn. 29:15-30) has rebounded upon himself, for now a second member of his own family has made her special contribution to the theme 'all Israel and Judah loved David' (v. 16)."²¹³

²¹⁰See Edwin Yamauchi, "Cultural Aspects of Marriage in the Ancient World," *Bibliotheca Sacra* 135:539 (July-September 1978):244.

²¹¹David's accomplishment was similar to scalping practices in the Indian wars in the United States.

²¹²For a study of four important women in David's life see Adele Berlin, "Characterization in Biblical Narrative: David's Wives," *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 23 (July 1982):69-85.

²¹³Gordon, p. 162.

David's behavior and wisdom in battle, guided and provided by God's Spirit, caused him to become increasingly effective and appreciated in Israel (v. 30). David had regarded himself as lightly esteemed (v. 23), but God made him highly esteemed (v. 30; cf. 9:2).

Throughout this chapter the writer balanced statements that credit God for David's successes (vv. 12, 14, 28) with others that credit David for them (vv. 5, 14, 15, 30). Both reasons were true. God's choice of David and David's choice of God worked together to make him successful. The opposite was also true of Saul. The Lord had forsaken Saul, but Saul had also forsaken the Lord, and the result was tragedy.

This chapter illustrates the fact that the godly often suffer through no fault of their own. It shows too that God causes even the worst intentions of the ungodly to elevate the godly (cf. Ps. 7:12-16; Rom. 8:28). We see here that the selfishness of the ungodly can produce irrational behavior (e.g., paranoia, v. 12, and schizophrenia, vv. 11, 17) and leads to their ruin. If we allow jealousy to take root in our hearts, it will devour us like a cancer. We should desire God's glory, as Jonathan did, rather than our own glory, as Saul did.

Jonathan's attempt to protect David 19:1-7

Saul now abandoned pretense (18:22) and ordered Jonathan and his servants to put David to death (cf. v. 11). He "went public" with his attacks against David feeling driven, like Pharaoh, to more desperate measures. This created a conflict of loyalties for Jonathan who needed to honor his father and king, but who also loved David (cf. 18:1, 3). Jonathan chose to tell David what Saul's intentions were, but he also tried to honor his father by urging him not to kill David. He appealed to Saul logically and rationally. He reminded Saul that he was the king and that David was his servant, that he needed to be fair with David, and that it was in Saul's best interest to let David live (v. 4). He also reminded Saul that David was the Lord's instrument who had defeated Israel's enemies and that Saul had rejoiced in his success. Moreover he appealed for justice since David's death was unwarranted (v. 5). Jonathan's words echo Saul's own statement when he had freed Jabesh-gilead earlier in his reign (11:12-15). Then Saul had generously refused to punish his detractors. Perhaps it was this memory that moved him to promise Jonathan that he would be merciful to David.

Jonathan's appeal was successful, at least temporarily, and resulted in Saul solemnly vowing not to kill David (v. 6), which vow he broke shortly (v. 10). Later Jonathan was not as successful (20:28-29). Nevertheless this time his appeal resulted in David's restoration to the court and his continuing ministry to the king (v. 7).

David's continuing success and Saul's renewed jealousy 19:8-10

This section records Saul's fourth attempt to kill David. The writer set his account of these attempts in chiasmic form.

- A Saul directly tried to kill David. 18:10-16
- B Saul indirectly tried using the Philistines. 18:17-20
- B' Saul indirectly tried using Jonathan and Saul's servants. 19:1-7
- A' Saul directly tried to kill David. 19:8-10

This literary structure emphasizes how thoroughly Saul wanted to do away with his rival. Not only did those who desired the best for God love David, but those who desired the best for themselves hated him.

This is the third reference to an evil spirit afflicting Saul (cf. 16:14; 18:10). This influence overcame Saul's good intentions and resulted in his breaking his vow to God (v. 6). Now David had to flee and escape. This phrase occurs three times in this chapter (vv. 12, 18), and it contrasts with David being in Saul's presence (v. 7). From now on David was no longer able to stay in Saul's presence, but he had to flee and escape seeking refuge from the king wherever he could find it. David's days as an outlaw, which began here, would continue until Saul died.

David's experience is typical of that of all people who choose to commit themselves to following God faithfully. Because God blesses them and makes them a blessing to others many people appreciate them. However others who want those blessings for themselves, but are not willing to do what is necessary to get them, despise them.

Michal's attempt to protect David 19:11-17

God's preservation of His anointed servant David stands out in this section as it does in the first one in this chapter (vv. 1-7). In both cases it was one of Saul's own children that came to David's rescue. Jonathan protected David at the beginning of this section (18:1-5), and Michal did so at its end (19:11-17). These acts of devotion bracket the chiasm noted above.

Saul resumed his purpose of putting David to death this time by using his servants (cf. v. 1). As Jonathan had done (v. 2), Michal told David what Saul was planning (v. 11). Then she aided his escape first by helping him flee from a window and then by fashioning a dummy in his bed and concocting a story that he lay sick. The household idol (Heb. *teraphim*) was a small image three or four inches high that many people carried on their persons or set up in their homes as good luck charms. Archaeologists have found many such images in Palestine. Evidently Michal intended the presence of this image beside (Heb. *'el*) the bed to convince Saul's servants that David was seriously ill.

"Michal's ruse was probably effected by piling clothing, carpets, or the like on David's bed and covering it with a garment, allowing only the goats' hair at the head to show."²¹⁴

The account of Michal's plan to provide David enough time to escape portrays her as a woman who had not committed herself completely to God. Was the household idol hers

²¹⁴Youngblood, p. 716.

or David's? The text does not say, but other references to Michal and David elsewhere lead me to conclude that it was hers. The possessor of the household idols was sometimes the heir of the family in the ancient Near East, so perhaps Michal kept this idol for inheritance purposes as well as for worship. Perhaps *teraphim* had some connection with childbearing (fertility; cf. Gen. 31:19 where barren Rachel kept *teraphim*).²¹⁵

Saul expected more loyalty from his daughter than he received. Jonathan had described David as Saul's servant (v. 4), but Saul now called him his enemy (v. 17). Michal seems to have considered her lie justifiable (cf. v. 11). Jonathan had not lied to Saul (vv. 4-5). Both Jonathan and Michal's words resulted in David's safety temporarily, but Jonathan and Michal's characters contrast in what they said to their father and king.

Saul's daughter, as well as his son, was protecting David from death. God's care for David resulted in the breaking of strong loyalties. In the ancient world a daughter's loyalty to her father normally remained strong even after marriage. God overcame what was natural to protect His anointed and faithful servant.

B. DAVID DRIVEN OUT BY SAUL 19:18—20:42

1. God's deliverance in Ramah 19:18-24

How natural it was for David to seek refuge with the faithful prophet Samuel who resided less than an hour's walk from Saul's headquarters. Naioth was evidently a compound within Ramah where Samuel headed a school of prophets.²¹⁶ God here rescued David, not by any human intermediary but directly by the overpowering influence of His Spirit. Prophesying involved speaking words from the Lord. Saul's three groups of messengers and even the king himself ended up serving God rather than opposing Him. The Holy Spirit overrode the king's authority.²¹⁷ Saul's disrobing (v. 24) probably symbolized the loss of his regal dignity and status as well as his personal dignity.²¹⁸ Such a person was not fit to be king.

This reference to Saul's prophesying (vv. 23-24), which happened near the place where he prophesied shortly after his anointing (10:12), became "an ironic comment on Saul's life story."²¹⁹ Saul had begun his reign with great potential plus God's enabling Spirit. Yet now he was almost a raving madman. Saul drove himself to the brink of insanity by

²¹⁵On the disputed significance of possessing the family idols, see Stuart A. West, "The Nuzi Tablets," *Bible and Spade* 10:3-4 (Summer-Autumn 1981):70; Kenneth A. Kitchen, *The Bible In Its World*, p. 70; and Kenneth L. Barker, "The Antiquity and Historicity of the Patriarchal Narratives," in *A Tribute to Gleason Archer*, p. 135. It is noteworthy that Rachel and Michal both were the second daughters of their fathers, both deceived their fathers with *teraphim*, and both proved to be disappointments to their husbands.

²¹⁶The Hebrew word literally means "habitations." For an extended note on the schools of prophets, see Keil and Delitzsch, pp. 199-206.

²¹⁷In 1 Kings 1:9-16 King Ahaziah sent three groups of messengers to arrest Elisha, but the prophet called down fire from heaven and consumed the first two groups. The commander of the third group did not seek to oppose God's anointed prophet and received mercy.

²¹⁸Robert P. Gordon, "Saul's Meningitis According to Targum 1 Samuel XIX 24," *Vetus Testamentum* 32:1 (January 1987):39.

²¹⁹Baldwin, p. 134.

refusing to submit to God who still exercised sovereign control over him despite the king's attempts to go his own way.

It is significant that this chapter closes with the repetition of the saying, "Is Saul also among the prophets?"

". . . To question the genuineness of Saul's prophetic behavior was to question his legitimacy as king of Israel . . ." ²²⁰

This derogatory saying brackets the story of Saul's contacts with Samuel and with the Holy Spirit (cf. 10:11). It reminds the reader that Saul had the potential to be a great king because of Samuel and the Spirit's resources that were available to him. The narrative that the two occurrences of this saying encloses explains Saul's failure. He lost the opportunity to found a dynasty, he lost his own throne, and he lost his personal dignity because he refused to act like a prophet. That is, he refused to put the honor, glory, and will of God before his personal ambitions and pride.

"Whereas one of the signs confirming Saul's election as king had been his participation in an ecstatic display by a band of prophets (10:5-13), his subjection to the same mysterious power in this section serves only to confirm his rejection by Yahweh." ²²¹

Saul lost the privilege of reigning, he became a vessel unto dishonor, he created problems for others, and he eventually destroyed himself. Another Saul, Saul of Tarsus, perhaps learning from the experiences of Saul of Gibeath, who may have been his namesake, feared the possibility that he might similarly disqualify himself (1 Cor. 9:27). ²²²

The three instances of David's deliverance in this chapter show how God preserved His anointed. He used both natural and supernatural means to do so. Since Christians are anointed by God with His Spirit (1 John 2:20), this record of how God preserves His anointed should be an encouragement to us.

2. Jonathan's advocacy for David ch. 20

This chapter records Jonathan's last attempt to reconcile Saul to David. The emphasis is on the hardening of Saul's heart that God allowed to take place since the king refused to repent genuinely.

David's concern for his own safety 20:1-11

David was wondering if he had done something wrong that had provoked Saul's hatred (v. 1). Walking with God is sometimes confusing. We need to learn, as David did, that

²²⁰Youngblood, p. 717.

²²¹Gordon, *I & II Samuel* . . . , p. 164.

²²²We must not confuse disqualification from service with loss of salvation. The former is possible for every believer; the latter is not (cf. Rom. 8:31-39).

when we try to follow God faithfully some people will oppose us simply because we want to do God's will. Their antagonism is not the result of our sinfulness but theirs. Jonathan assured David that he had done nothing wrong (cf. 14:45), but Jonathan did not appreciate the intensity of Saul's hatred for David (cf. 19:6). He was in a state of denial.

There are several oaths and strong affirmations in this chapter (vv. 3, 12, 13, 16, 17, 23, 42). The one that David made in verse 3 is very strong. He believed correctly that he was in mortal danger, and he tried to make Jonathan see this. Jonathan was open to anything David wanted to suggest to prove his point (v. 4).

The new moon introduced the new month that the Israelites celebrated with a sacrificial meal. It was both a religious and a civil holiday (Num. 10:10; 28:11-15; cf. 2 Kings 4:23). David would normally have been present at the king's table since he was one of Saul's high-ranking military commanders. However, David evidently believed that Saul would try to kill him again if he ate with the king. Hiding in a field seems to be an extreme measure. Why could David not have gone home to Bethlehem or stayed with friends who would have kept his presence secret from Saul? Perhaps David trusted no one but Jonathan now.

Apparently David's family held a reunion on one of these holidays each year (v. 6; cf. 1:21; 2:19). David told a lie; he did not go to Bethlehem but hid in a field. At the beginning of his period of flight from Saul, David resorted to trickery as well as trust in Yahweh. As this trial wore on, he learned to trust God more completely, as we shall see. His trials purified his character (cf. James 1).

David proposed his test (v. 7) to convince Jonathan that Saul really intended to kill David. The covenant to which David referred was the one he and Jonathan had previously made (18:3-4). David appealed to it and asked Jonathan to kill him himself if he must die rather than allowing Saul to do it. David wanted to die at the hand of his friend rather than at the hand of his enemy. David had temporarily lost sight of God's promise that he would rule over Israel.

Jonathan refused to kill David but promised to tell him if Saul responded with hostility as David predicted he would (v. 9). Jonathan then suggested a plan by which he could communicate with David without revealing David's location (vv. 10-11).

Jonathan and David's long-range covenant 20:12-17

Jonathan appealed to the Lord in an oath indicating the seriousness of the situation (vv. 12, 13). He prayed that God would be with David as he had been with Saul, namely, as Israel's king (v. 13). These verses indicate clearly that Jonathan believed David would someday be king and subdue his enemies including Saul (vv. 13-15; cf. 13:14). He had come to appreciate Yahweh's loyal love (Heb. *hesed*, vv. 14, 15) and now called on David to deal similarly with his descendants in the future. He secured a promise from David that when he reigned he would protect Jonathan's family. "Lovingkindness" (Heb. *hesed*, vv. 14, 15) is a covenant term of commitment (v. 16, 42; cf. Deut. 7:7-9).

Previously David and Jonathan had made a covenant that Jonathan would yield the throne to David and support him (18:3-4). Now David promised not to kill Jonathan's descendants after David became king. It was common in the ancient Near East for kings who began a new dynasty to kill all the descendants of the former king to keep them from rising up and trying to reclaim the throne. Jonathan called on God to require an accounting for antagonism at the hands of David's enemies (v. 16). This was the second vow that David had made after the one in which he pledged his love for Jonathan personally (v. 17; cf. 18:3-4).

The plan for communicating Saul's intentions to David 20:18-23

Saul would miss David at his feast not only because his seat would be vacant but because warriors normally expressed their support for their king by eating with him at important meals (v. 18). David's absence would have raised a question in Saul's mind about David's commitment to him. The writer did not identify the exact place where David had previously hidden himself on some eventful day (v. 19). Evidently it was near the stone Ezel, a site unknown today but well-known then. Probably Jonathan chose this place to communicate with David because it was convenient and secure, evidently near Gibeah.

The shooting of arrows was probably just a practical way to signal David. Jonathan reminded David of their agreement as they parted (v. 23; cf. Gen. 31:48-53).²²³

"Friendships are one of the most enriching of life's experiences: how poor is the man or woman who is friendless! Friends enrich life because they *give*, without counting the cost. Jonathan was a man who gave to David more than he received; and in doing so he showed how different he was from the typical king described in 8:11-17, whose sole function was to *take*. Life has its givers and its takers; Jonathan was supremely a giver—and David, though destined to become a king, persistently declined to take anything away from Saul. He patiently waited for God to give him the crown of Israel."²²⁴

Saul's anger over David's absence 20:24-34

Saul concluded at first that David had not come to the new moon sacrificial meal because he was unclean (cf. Lev. 7:20-21; 15:16). His continued absence required an explanation, which Saul looked to David's friend to provide. Saul hated David so much he could not bring himself to use his name (vv. 27, 31). "The son of . . ." was a mild insult (cf. 10:11).²²⁵ By insulting Jonathan's mother Saul was intensifying his insult (v. 30). Today's English Version translated Saul's epithet, "You bastard!" The New Jerusalem Bible rendered it, "You son of a rebellious slut!" Jonathan had chosen David as his friend to his own shame (v. 30) in the sense that because he had made him his friend, rather than

²²³For discussion of a minor textual problem in verse 23, see Emunah Finkelstein, "An Ignored Haplography in Samuel," *Journal of Semitic Studies* 4:4 (October 1959):356-57.

²²⁴David Payne, p. 106.

²²⁵Youngblood, p. 723.

killing him as Saul wanted him to do, David would take Jonathan's place as the king of Israel. That would be a shame for Jonathan. Jonathan had chosen David to the shame of his mother's nakedness in that Jonathan's conception and birth were useless if David replaced him. Jonathan would fail to achieve the purpose for which he had been born, in Saul's way of thinking (v. 31). Saul perceived David as a threat to his continuing dynasty, not just to his personal rule. Clearly Saul was rejecting and opposing God's will that his reign and his dynasty would not endure. Saul said he would kill David so David could not do what God had said he would do.

Jonathan's ambitions were not the same as Saul's. He wanted God's will to succeed more than he wanted to become Israel's king. Therefore he interceded for David again (v. 32; cf. 19:4). Saul, exasperated by what he interpreted as Jonathan's selfless folly, tried to execute David's advocate as he had formerly tried to kill David himself (v. 33; cf. 18:11; 19:10). This brush with death finally convinced Jonathan that David had been right about Saul's intentions after all (cf. v. 3). It also convinced him to get out of the king's presence. Jonathan departed in hot anger because of Saul's attitude toward David and because of Saul's attitude toward himself. Saul had said David would not allow Jonathan to rule, but Saul himself almost prevented that from happening by attacking the crown prince. Jonathan's departure from Saul's table symbolized his departure from his father's fellowship.

David's final departure from Gibeah 20:35-42

The next morning Jonathan proceeded to communicate Saul's intentions to David in the way they had previously planned. Jonathan probably used a very young boy as his arrow retriever so the lad would not ask embarrassing questions or figure out what was happening. God permitted David and Jonathan to say good-bye face to face. They had anticipated that such a parting might be impossible. David gave proper respect to Jonathan as the king's son even though they were best friends (v. 41). Saul's rebellion against God's will had made their companionship impossible. They parted reminding themselves of the commitments they had made to each other and to their descendants (v. 42; cf. vv. 16, 23; 2 Sam. 9). David and Jonathan decided not to see each other again for their mutual protection (but cf. 23:16-18).

This chapter reveals that both Saul and Jonathan realized that David was the Lord's anointed who would one day replace Saul. However, their responses to this situation were opposite because their desires were opposite. Saul wanted to see his own plans fulfilled, but Jonathan wanted to see God's will done. Jonathan ended up choosing David, his natural rival, in preference over Saul, his natural father. His sister Michal had made the same choice. David later kept his covenant with Jonathan (2 Sam. 9:1) showing that he was a covenant-keeping individual similar to Yahweh. This is another evidence that David was a man after God's own heart (13:14).

The main character in this pericope is Jonathan. His attitude to God's will contrasts positively with Saul's attitude. Rather than opposing God's will and His anointed as Saul did, Jonathan humbled himself before God's will and supported the Lord's anointed,

David. Jonathan faced a terrible tension since Saul's attitude divided Jonathan's loyalty. He solved this problem by putting God's will first. He submitted to the domestic authority of his father and to the civil authority of his king by obeying Saul except when obedience to Saul conflicted with obedience to God (cf. 1 Pet. 2:13-17).

C. DAVID IN EXILE CHS. 21—30

In chapters 21—30 we see David's forces growing stronger and stronger while Saul's forces get weaker and weaker. This is a further demonstration of the fertility theme. However these chapters also develop the motif of the proper response to Yahweh's anointed.

Interesting, too, are the parallels between David's experiences as the Lord's anointed and Jesus Christ's as the Lord's anointed. Rejection preceded acceptance, and suffering preceded reigning in both cases. God blessed both of these servants personally, and they became a blessing to others because of their commitment to Yahweh and His Law.

"The true servant of God must willingly suffer affliction with the full assurance that God is performing His purposes. Positions of prominence and prestige are not to be sought and worked for. Rather, the leader who desires Christ's blessing must wait patiently on Him for advancement and promotion to opportunities of greater service."²²⁶

Several of the Psalms have their backgrounds in these chapters (Ps. 18; 34; 52; 54; 56; 57; 63; 124; 138; 142; and possibly others).

1. David's initial movements chs. 21—22

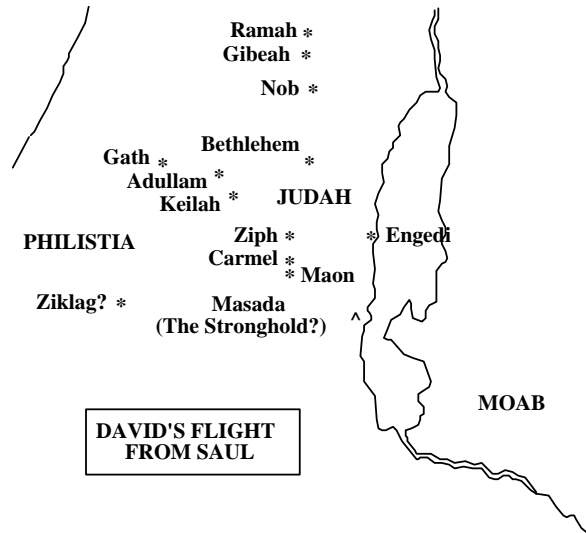
"The two chapters comprise a literary unit of three sections arranged in chiasmic order. Chapters 21:1-9 and 22:6-23 are concerned with the priestly compound at Nob in Benjamin while the central section (21:10—22:5) summarizes David's flight to Gath in Philistia, Adullam in Judah, and Mizpah in Moab."²²⁷

²²⁶Tucker, p. 159.

²²⁷Youngblood, p. 727.

David's flight to Nob 21:1-9

Nob stood one and one-half miles northeast of Jerusalem and two and one-half miles southeast of Gibeah. There Ahimelech served as high priest. Priestly activity and evidently the tabernacle were now there (cf. 17:54). It is significant that David's first place of refuge was among God's representatives on earth. He wanted to get help from the Lord through them (cf. 22:10) as he had done in the past (22:15). Apparently Ahimelech was trembling because David was alone (cf. 16:4). Had Saul sent him to harm the priests (cf. 22:6-23), or was David in some kind of trouble? Bear in mind that David was Saul's general, and as such he usually travelled with escorting soldiers.



David appears to have lied to Ahimelech (v. 2). However, he may have been referring to Yahweh when he mentioned "the king" who had sent him (cf. 20:22; 21:8). Even so he wanted Ahimelech to think that Saul had sent him. This was deception at best and a lie at worst rooted ultimately in selfishness and lack of faith in God. David made some mistakes in his early years as a fugitive. He handled himself better as time passed. During this time God was training him for future service. David proceeded to explain that the reason he was alone was that he had sent his soldiers elsewhere. He intended to rendezvous with them shortly and had come to Nob himself to obtain provisions, protection, and prayer (cf. 22:10).

Ahimelech gave David the showbread that the priests ate (Exod. 25:30; Lev. 24:5-9). This was the bread that for a week lay on the table of showbread in the tabernacle. Each Sabbath the priests replaced this bread with fresh loaves. Ahimelech was careful that David's men were ritually clean, not having had sexual relations with women that day (v. 4; cf. Lev. 15:8; Exod. 19:141-5). David assured him that their bodies were clean ritually (v. 5). This made it permissible for them to eat the consecrated bread. Ahimelech correctly gave David the provisions he needed (v. 6).

Jesus said this was proper for David to have done (Matt. 12:1-4). The reason was human life takes precedence over ceremonial law with God.²²⁸ David was probably not at the point of starvation. Certainly the Lord's disciples were not (Matt. 12). Nevertheless human need should always be a higher priority than the observance of a ritual used to worship God. We acknowledge the same priority today. Suppose you pass a house that is on fire. You stop, run up to the front door, bang on the door, and ring the doorbell. You look in the window and see someone lying on the floor. You then kick in the door and drag the unconscious person outside to safety. Even though breaking into someone else's

²²⁸See F. F. Bruce, *The Hard Sayings of Jesus*, p. 33.

house is a criminal offense, the law will not prosecute you since you saved that person's life.

The mention of Doeg, an Edomite who had risen high in Saul's government (v. 7), prepares the reader for his informing Saul about what happened at Nob (22:9-19). Perhaps Doeg was "detained before the Lord" because he had come to the tabernacle to present an offering or to conduct some other business there.

Having previously requested provisions of Ahimelech (v. 3) David now asked for protection, namely, a sword (v. 8). Goliath's huge sword, which had initially rested in David's tent (17:54), was now in the tabernacle wrapped in the priest's ephod, perhaps because it was a historic relic. David eagerly accepted it from Ahimelech since there was no sword like it. It is interesting that David, and later Solomon, used the same expression to describe the Lord (2 Sam. 7:22; 1 Kings 8:23). Though there was no better protection than Goliath's sword physically, the Lord was an even better protector spiritually. There is none like Him.

David's flight to Gath 21:10-15

David's next refuge also proved to be insecure. It is a mystery why he sought refuge with Goliath's sword in that giant's hometown. As Chuck Swindoll once said, David would have been as conspicuous in Gath as Dolly Parton in a convent. Evidently he thought he would be welcome in Gath since he was fleeing from Saul. Perhaps he went there since Achish was an enemy of Saul's, as David was. The people identified him at once and called him Israel's king (v. 11). This may have been a slight on his authority; they may have meant that he was only a local ruler (cf. Josh. 12:7). Alternatively they may have heard of David's anointing as Israel's next king. In any case Achish's advisers took David's presence as a threat (v. 11; cf. 29:1-5). Perhaps they felt as the American president might have felt if a high ranking Russian general defected and sought asylum in the United States during the Cold War. The potential of his helpfulness against the enemy needed weighing against the chance that he would prove disloyal, turn on his host, and do much damage.

David sensed his personal danger and pretended to be insane to save his life. Evidently Achish dismissed him concluding that David was mad and could be of no help to him against Saul (cf. 29:3, 6, 9; Ps. 34 title). Furthermore ancient Near Easterners regarded the insane as harbingers of evil and so avoided them.

". . . insanity was often believed in the ancient world to be an affliction of the gods, and it was customary to treat madmen as taboo if not holy, people who should not be harmed in any way."²²⁹

In both Nob and Gath David resorted to deception to protect himself, and in each place some bad consequences resulted. Doeg killed the priests, and David had to abandon Gath. However, he also trusted in the Lord. He wrote Psalms 56 and 34 during and after his

²²⁹David Payne, p. 113.

time in Gath, according to the titles of those psalms. They reveal that he was trusting God. His ultimate hope for provision and protection was not the priests or Saul's enemies but the Lord Himself. This faith undoubtedly explains the fact that God preserved him and some good consequences came out of these experiences. David had two more encounters with Achish both of which were beneficial for David. 1 Samuel 21 helps us see the mixture of right and wrong in David's actions, but David's psalms clarify the proper response that the godly should make when opposition assails us.

David's flight to Adullam 22:1-2

The town of Adullam (lit. refuge) stood a mile or two south of the Elah Valley where David had slain Goliath and about 10 miles east-southeast of Gath. There are many huge caves in the limestone hills in that area several of which can accommodate over 400 people. Evidently David's family was no longer safe from Saul in Bethlehem, which was 10 miles east-northeast of Adullam.

"If Saul would attack his own family (20:33), there was no telling what he might do to David's."²³⁰

David now became the leader of a group of people who for various reasons had become discontented with Saul's government.²³¹ This growing movement of support behind him led eventually to David's crowning as king of all Israel.

David's flight to Moab 22:3-4

Moab was a reasonable place for David's parents to seek protection since David's great-grandmother, Ruth, was a Moabitess. The exact location of Mizpah (lit. watchtower) of Moab is unknown. David may have wanted to secure the support of the Moabites since he could use help from neighboring kingdoms if Saul's antagonism led to full-scale war. The stronghold (v. 4) was probably another name for Mizpah or another place close to it in Moab.

David's flight to the forest of Hereth 22:5

Gad appears to have been a prophet who remained with David throughout his reign (cf. 2 Sam. 24:11). Samuel had died, but God provided another prophet through whom He communicated to the king-elect. The forest of Hereth was somewhere in Judah, but its exact location is unknown.²³²

²³⁰Gordon, *I & II Samuel* . . . , p. 172.

²³¹One cannot read verse 2 without reflecting on how needy people later sought and now seek refuge in David's greatest son, Jesus Christ.

²³²On the alternate reading, "David . . . had departed," (v. 6), see D. Winton Thomas, "A Note on *noda'* in I Samuel XXII. 6," *Journal of Theological Studies* 21:2 (October 1970):401-2.

Saul's slaughter of the priests 22:6-23

The writer's attention focused next on Saul's activities. He used the literary device of focusing on David, then on Saul, then on David, etc. He used the same technique in chapters 1—3 with Samuel and Eli's sons to contrast Samuel's goodness with the wickedness of Hophni and Phinehas. The same purpose is in view in chapters 21—29 with David and Saul.

Saul was aware that some in his army, apparently even some of his tribal kinsmen from Benjamin, had deserted to David (v. 7). He showed signs of paranoia when he claimed that Jonathan had encouraged David to ambush him (vv. 8, 13). There is no indication that Jonathan had done this. Doeg was obviously loyal to Saul (vv. 9-10), but he proved disloyal to Yahweh (vv. 18-19).

Ahimelech appealed to Saul on David's behalf much as Jonathan had done earlier (vv. 14-15; cf. 17:4-5). Nevertheless this time Saul did not respond to reasonable persuasion (v. 16). Saul's disregard for Yahweh's will is obvious in his command to kill the priests whom God had appointed to serve Him. This punishment was entirely too severe since the crime Saul charged them with was failing to tell Saul where David was.

Saul's soldiers had too much respect for the priesthood to slay the anointed servants of the Lord (v. 17). Moreover they probably realized that Saul's order was irrational. Doeg was an Edomite, a foreigner who had less respect for the Mosaic Law (cf. 21:7). He not only obeyed the king but went beyond Saul's command and slaughtered all the men, women, children, and animals in Nob (v. 19). Nonetheless Saul was also responsible (v. 21). Earlier Saul had failed to slay all the Amalekites at the Lord's command (15:9). Now he was slaying all the Nobites without divine authorization.

"Through the hand of a foreigner, Saul perpetrates upon Israelites, priests of the Lord, what he himself did not perpetrate upon foreigners, the Amalekites."²³³

God preserved one of Eli's line even though 85 other priests died. This man fled to David, so from then on the priesthood was with David rather than Saul. David acknowledged that his deception of Ahimelech was responsible for the slaughter of the priests (v. 22; cf. 21:2). David became the protector of the priesthood. The king-elect and the priest-elect now became fellow fugitives from Saul. Read Psalm 52 to get insight into how David felt during this incident.

When people refuse to submit to God's authority over them, they begin to die: spiritually, socially, psychologically, and physically (Rom. 6:23). Eli and Saul had both refused to submit to God's authority. Eli, the priest, put his family before God. Consequently God cut off his family. Even though David was the cause of 85 priests' deaths, this was one way God partially fulfilled the prophecy concerning Eli's descendants (2:27-36). God used David's folly to accomplish His will. So even in this David became a blessing. This

²³³Miscall, p. 136.

in no way justifies David's lie (21:2), but it does show how even in his sinning God used David for blessing (cf. Rom. 6:1-2). Saul, the king, put himself before God. Therefore God cut off his life. Saul became increasingly paranoid, isolated from others, hateful toward his supporters as well as his enemies, and guilty of shedding innocent blood.

When people submit to God's authority over them, they really begin to live (John 10:10). David submitted to God's authority over him. His sins, including his deceiving Ahimelech, bore bad consequences for himself and others. Nevertheless God continued to bless and use David. He blessed him personally. David continued to rise to the throne. God also blessed him by using him to accomplish God's will, here the pruning of Eli's descendants.

Therefore we conclude that the most important issue is one of long term authority, not incidental acts. Acts are important, but who is in control, God or self, is even more important. For a believer the most important issue is authority. Believers can determine who is in control of our lives fairly easily by asking ourselves two test question. Do I ask God for guidance, or do I ignore Him and make my own plans and decisions without praying? Do I submit to His word, or do I disobey it having ignored it or disregarded it?

2. Saul's pursuit of David ch. 23

The literary spotlight now moves back from Saul to David and his activities.

"We have just witnessed how Saul, in an outburst of rage, became responsible for the destruction of the priestly city of Nob. In ch. 23, David, even while on the run from Saul, is shown saving a city from Philistine attack."²³⁴

David at Keilah 23:1-14

David went to rescue the people of Keilah from the Philistines, but then he had to flee from that town because the citizens were going to hand him over to Saul.

David's rescue of Keilah 23:1-5

Keilah was about three miles southeast of Adullam in the Shephelah, the foothills between the coastal plain on the west and the hill country of Judah on the east. The Philistines were plundering the threshing floors there. The threshing floors were places where the Israelites stored their threshed grain after threshing it (cf. 2 Kings 6:27; Joel 3:24). David sought to defend his countrymen and fellow Judahites from their hostile foreign enemy even though he was having to watch out for Saul. Saul should have come to their rescue since he was the king, but there is no mention of him doing so.

The writer recorded in this passage that David inquired of the Lord four times (vv. 2, 4, 10, 11). He placed himself under God's authority, though Saul did not. For this reason

²³⁴Gordon, *I & II Samuel* . . . , p. 175.

God could and did work through David as His vice-regent. God manifested His will through the Urim and Thummim in the priestly ephod (vv. 6, 9; cf. Exod. 28:28).²³⁵ Evidently Abiathar interpreted the will of God for David.

David was not just defending himself during this period of his life. He was aggressively carrying out the will of God by defeating Israel's enemies as the Lord's anointed servant. God told David to go against the Philistines first. Then in response to David's second prayer, He promised that He (emphatic in the Hebrew text) would give the Philistines into David's hand. David's 600 men (v. 13) were understandably afraid to attack the Philistines who had greater numbers and stronger forces. Nevertheless David attacked and soundly defeated the Philistines because of God's promise and power. The writer gave credit to David for the victory (v. 5), but clearly it was God who enabled him to win against such a daunting foe (v. 4).

David's escape from Keilah 23:6-14

Abiathar had evidently remained in the forest of Hereth when David took his men to attack the Philistines in Keilah (cf. 22:20-23). Now the priest joined David at Keilah (v. 6). The presence of the ephod made it possible for David to continue to obtain guidance from the Lord in answer to his prayers.

Saul piously claimed that God had delivered David into his hands (v. 7). Obviously God had not done this since David was the Lord's anointed, and it was not His will that Saul should hunt him down, much less kill him. Keilah evidently had only one gate by which people could enter and exit the town. Saul felt confident that he could control the gate and so trap David.

Saul summoned soldiers to accompany him to Keilah (v. 7), but there is no mention that he prayed for divine guidance as David had done (vv. 2, 4). David prayed again and requested answers to two questions (vv. 10-11). He opened and closed his prayer with an appeal to the "LORD God of Israel," the ultimate ruler of His people. He also described himself as the Lord's "servant" twice. David voiced concern for his men (v. 12) as well as for himself (v. 11). God gave the answer to David's second question first, and then He answered his first question.

The willingness of the people of Keilah to hand their savior over to Saul demonstrates base ingratitude for David's deliverance of them. It also reveals how fearful they were of Saul who had recently destroyed another town, Nob, for harboring David (22:19).

David left Keilah after he learned that he was vulnerable if he stayed there (v. 13). He did not take revenge on the citizens of Keilah for telling Saul where he was. Saul had taken revenge on the citizens of Nob for not telling him where David was. The number of David's supporters had grown from 400 (22:2) to 600. More people were siding with

²³⁵The Urim (lit. lights) and Thummim (lit. perfections) were evidently two stones or similar objects, one light and the other dark in color. The high priest carried them in the pocket on the front of his ephod (robe). He ascertained God's will by drawing one out after mentally assigning a meaning to each.

David and were turning from Saul. Saul abandoned his plans to attack Keilah, and David moved on to the wilderness near Ziph.

David in the wilderness of Ziph 23:15-23

David had sought and received divine guidance and had succeeded at Keilah (vv. 1-14). Now Saul sought and received human guidance and failed near Ziph (vv. 15-23). Jonathan visited David to encourage his friend in this wilderness, but David had to flee again because the inhabitants of Ziph also threatened to betray him.

Jonathan's encouragement of David 23:15-18

The town of Ziph was 12 miles southeast of Keilah, and the wilderness of Ziph was near the town. Ziph lay in the wilderness area of Judah whereas Keilah was in the more hospitable Shephelah. The sites of Horesh (v. 15) and Hachilah (v. 19) are unknown.

Jonathan risked his own safety to encourage his friend again. God had used Abiathar to encourage David recently in Keilah (v. 6). Jonathan encouraged David "in God" (cf. 30:6). What he said to David rested on God's promises and plans for David that both Jonathan and Saul now knew (cf. 20:2, 31). Jonathan cooperated with God's plans, but Saul resisted them. It is curious that Jonathan could find David, but Saul and his intelligence experts could not locate him. God was protecting His servant. Jonathan and David made another covenant (cf. 18:3; 20:8, 12-17). This is the last meeting of these "soul brothers" that the text records.

David's escape from the wilderness of Ziph 23:19-23

Again the writer directed our attention back to Saul. Psalm 54 tells us what David was thinking and praying during this experience. He trusted in God.

Evidently the Ziphites thought that they would be better off if they informed Saul of David's presence in their area than if the king discovered that he was there. He might have blamed them for sheltering David and taken revenge on them as he had on the people of Nob.

Again Saul spoke piously (cf. v. 7) and praised the Ziphites for having compassion on him. Really it was David who was in need of compassion from these people, but he found none. Saul proceeded to seek human help in finding David from his allies ("go," "make more sure," "investigate," "see," "look," "learn;" vv. 22-23). However there is no mention of his seeking divine help in prayer (cf. vv. 2, 4, 11-12). He attributed cunning to David, but Saul was the really cunning hunter in this story.²³⁶ The king was projecting his own deceitful behavior on David. Whereas God promised to go with David and deliver the Philistines into his hands (vv. 2, 4), Saul promised to go with the Ziphites to destroy David among the Judahites (v. 23).

²³⁶Herod the Great was another cunning ruler, who was also not worthy to be king, who tried to execute the Lord's anointed, Jesus Christ (cf. Matt. 2:1-12).

David in the wilderness of Maon 23:24-29

Maon stood about five miles south of Ziph in the wilderness of Judah. The Arabah describes the low-lying area that extends from Mt. Hermon to the Red Sea including the Jordan Valley and Dead Sea regions. Jeshimon means "desert" or "waste" in Hebrew, so it may have been the name of a region east of Ziph.

Some of David's sympathizers ("they," v. 25) informed him of the king's approach with soldiers. David and his men then sought refuge behind a huge rock in the area. Just as Saul's men were about to close in on David news reached Saul that the Philistines had invaded an unspecified area of Israel. Saul had to break off his personal vendetta to respond to the Philistine danger (cf. v. 1). David then moved on to Engedi, 14 miles east of Ziph, to increase his safety.

This chapter encourages all of God's servants who, like David, feel vulnerable to attacks by people who do not fear the Lord.

How did God deliver David? He saved him by bringing information to his ears that David needed to protect himself (vv. 2, 4, 11-12, 25). He also did it by distracting David's enemy (vv. 27-28).

What did David do while he trusted God? He did not become anxious and just wait. He sought God in prayer (vv. 2, 4, 11, 12; cf. Ps. 54; Phil. 4:6), and he proceeded to serve God (vv. 2, 5; cf. Matt. 28:19-20).

How did David receive strength during his trials? God answered his prayers (vv. 2, 4, 11, 12; cf. Saul). Moreover other godly people encouraged David, namely, Abiathar the priest, who helped him in prayer (v. 6), and Jonathan the prince, who reminded him of God's promises (vv. 16-18).

3. David's goodness to two fools ch. 24—26

". . . chapters 24—26 form a discrete literary unit within 1 Samuel. Chapters 24 and 26 are virtually mirror images of each other, beginning with Saul's receiving a report about David's latest hiding place (24:1; 26:1), focusing on David's refusal to lift a hand against Saul, 'the Lord's anointed' (24:6, 10; 26:11), and concluding with the words of a remorseful Saul and his returning home from his pursuit of David (24:17-22; 26:21, 25). The two chapters form a frame around the central chapter 25, where the churlish Nabal functions as an alter ego of the rejected Saul. In addition, divine protection that keeps David from shedding innocent blood runs as a unifying thread through all three chapters."²³⁷

²³⁷Youngblood, p. 745.

Saul, who had disregarded God's Law, became a deadly threat to David (23:19-28). However, David, who regarded God's Law, became a source of life to Saul (23:29—24:22) and to others in Israel (ch. 25).

In the previous section, Saul sought the opportunity to take David's life. In this one (23:29—24:22), given the opportunity to take Saul's life, David spared him.

David's first sparing of Saul's life ch. 24

The incident recorded in this chapter concerns cutting off (vv. 4, 5, 11, 21). David had the opportunity and received encouragement to cut off Saul's life but chose to cut off only his robe hem. He ended up promising not to cut off Saul's descendants and name.

"The verb 'cut off' forms something of a recurring theme, a *leit-motiv*, in 1 Samuel 20-24."²³⁸

David's cutting off of Saul's hem 24:1-7

Engedi lay near the Salt Sea's western shore close to its mid-point north to south. Even today it is a refreshing oasis with waterfall, tropical plants, and wild goats. The Hebrew word means "spring of the kid." It may have been while David was hiding in this cave that he wrote Psalm 57 and or Psalm 142 (see their titles; cf. 22:1).

Saul pursued David with 3,000 of his finest soldiers, which gave him a five-to-one advantage over David, who had only 600 men (23:13). The "Rocks of the Wild Goats" was evidently a local site, which archaeologists have not yet identified. There Saul discovered a sheepfold that evidently encircled the mouth of one of the caves in those limestone hills. The king entered the cave to relieve himself unaware of the mortal danger in which he was placing himself because David and his men were hiding in the recesses of the cave.

David's men interpreted Saul's vulnerable position as a divine provision whereby David could free himself from his enemy (v. 4). There is no record in the text that God had indeed told David what they said He had. He may have told David that he would overcome his enemy, but certainly He had not given David permission to assassinate His anointed, King Saul. David's advisers seem to have been resorting to pious language to urge David to follow their counsel (cf. 23:7). We must always evaluate the advice of friends in the light of God's Word even when they claim divine authority. Their counsel moved David to take some action against Saul, which he soon regretted.

The hem or edge of a person's garment in the ancient Near East made a statement about his or her social standing. A king's hem was especially ornate and identified him as the king.²³⁹ By cutting off this piece of Saul's robe, which Saul may have laid aside as he

²³⁸Baldwin, p. 146. Cf. 15:28; 20:14-17; 24:4.

²³⁹See Milgrom, pp. 61-65.

relieved himself (v. 3), David suggested that he could cut off Saul's reign just as easily (cf. v. 21). His act constituted mild rebellion against Saul's authority.²⁴⁰

Almost immediately David realized that his clever trick was inappropriate. Since Saul was the king, David had no right to tamper with his clothing. Furthermore, David realized that any attempt to take the kingdom from Saul, as he had taken the symbol of that kingdom, was contrary to God's will. Since Saul was God's anointed (v. 6) it was God's place to remove him, not David's. This little incident provides another window into David's thinking. David was acknowledging Yahweh's sovereignty by submitting to His authority in setting Saul up as king (cf. Prov. 24:21). David refused to take revenge for the trouble that Saul had caused him.

"Perhaps no greater example of wisdom practice is found than in David's response to Saul."²⁴¹

It is interesting that God prevented David's enemies from assassinating him later when he was Israel's king (cf. Gal. 6:7). Compare also Jesus' refusal to take vengeance on His oppressors.

David's verbal defense to Saul 24:8-15

The object lesson that David presented to Saul had a double application. David proved that he was not trying to kill Saul because Saul was the Lord's anointed. Furthermore he showed that it was inappropriate for Saul to seek to kill him because he, too, was the Lord's anointed, as Saul now knew (v. 20). David modelled for Saul what the king's dealings with him should have been.

"Our tendency is to say, 'Oh, just leave it alone. It'll all work out.' But David didn't leave it alone. He said, 'King Saul, you're listening to false counsel. People are telling you lies about me. Why do you listen to them?' Then he said, 'Let me give you proof, verbal and visual proof, O King!' . . .

"David told Saul the whole unvarnished truth; he told it to the person to whom it mattered most. Not to his comrades or to Saul's friends or to the people of Israel, but to Saul himself. He came to terms with the individual with whom there was the battle."²⁴²

By addressing Saul as his lord (v. 8), his king (v. 8), and his father (v. 11), David expressed respect, submission, and affection. People sometimes used the term "father" to imply a covenant relationship, and David may have had that in mind here (cf. 26:25).²⁴³

²⁴⁰D. J. Wiseman, "Alalakh," in *Archaeology and Old Testament Study*, p. 128.

²⁴¹Heater, "Young David . . .," p. 54. Cf. Prov. 24:21.

²⁴²Swindoll, pp. 88, 89.

²⁴³J. M. Munn-Rankin, "Diplomacy in Western Asia in the Early Second Millennium B.C.," *Iraq* 18 (1956):68-110.

He was Saul's son-in-law and successor (son) under Yahweh's covenant with Israel (cf. 18:3; 20:16, 42; 23:18; 2 Sam. 9:1).

David called on Yahweh to judge (respond to his actions) and to avenge (reward David for his dealings with Saul; v. 12; cf. Deut. 32:35; Rom. 12:17-21). He promised that he would not usurp God's role by judging Saul or by rewarding him in kind for his evil deeds. He may have compared himself to a dead dog and a single flea (v. 14) to help Saul realize that he viewed himself as harmless and insignificant, beneath Saul's dignity to pursue. These comparisons may also have been warnings that Saul should not think of David as helpless and insignificant. David also voiced his reliance on God to defend and save him (v. 15; cf. Ps. 35:1).

David's defense here reminds us of Samuel's *apologia* to the nation when he reached the end of his career (ch. 12).

David's promise not to cut off Saul's descendants and name 24:16-22

David's words and actions convicted Saul of his actions (v. 17), and the king wept tears of remorse (v. 16). He referred to David as his "son" (v. 16), as David had earlier called Saul his "father" (v. 11). Saul confessed David's superior righteousness (v. 17) and goodness (v. 18). There is no more powerful tribute than one that comes from an adversary. Saul even called on the Lord to reward David with blessing for his treatment of the king (v. 19). Saul then confessed that he realized that David's ultimate succession to the throne of Israel was inevitable (v. 20; cf. 23:17).

Finally Saul asked David not to cut off his descendants when he came to power (v. 21). As noted earlier, it was customary in the ancient Near East for a new king to kill all the descendants of the ruler whom he replaced. This prevented them from rising up and reestablishing the dead king's dynasty. David had already promised Jonathan that he would not kill his descendants (20:14-17), and he now made the same promise to Saul (v. 22). To cut off someone's name meant to obliterate the memory of him. David even agreed to spare Saul's reputation in Israel (cf. 2 Sam. 2:17-27).

Saul's remorse was evidently genuine, but David had learned that it would probably be only temporary. Consequently when Saul departed and returned to Gibeah, David again sought protection in "the stronghold," probably one of the refuges near Engedi (perhaps Masada? v. 22; cf. 23:29).

This chapter helps us to deal with the common temptation to get even by showing us David's example of trusting God and not retaliating. It also deals with how we should view securing what God has promised us. David let God determine how and when he would become king. He refused the temptation to take matters into his own hands and thereby determine his destiny. We see David growing in this chapter. He began by threatening the king, but then he backed off and declined to kill Saul. Finally he determined even to trust God to control Saul's descendants, as well as Saul himself, and to preserve Saul's memory in Israel. God rewarded David for his trust and obedience by

giving him a peaceful conscience immediately and safety when his own son, Absalom, rose up against him.

David's sparing of Nabal's life ch. 25

"Chapter 25 is the central panel in the triptych that comprises chapters 24—26. As such it not only anchors the literary unit but also facilitates the fact that chapters 24 and 26 mirror each other."²⁴⁴

This central chapter also has a chiasmic structure that focuses attention on Abigail's effective appeal to David.

- "A. Samuel dies (v. 1a).
- B. David the fugitive is in the vicinity of the wealthy Nabal and his beautiful wife Abigail (vv. 1b-3).
- C. Hearing of Nabal's situation and later rebuffed by him, David prepares to avenge the insult (vv. 4-13).
- D. Abigail prepares food to take to David (vv. 14-19).
- E. David meets Abigail (vv. 20-35).
- D'. Abigail returns home to find Nabal gorging himself on food (vv. 36-38).
- C'. Hearing of Nabal's death, David praises the Lord for having upheld his cause against Nabal (v. 39a).
- B'. David the fugitive has taken the beautiful Abigail as his second wife (vv. 39b-43).
- A'. Saul treats David as though he were dead (v. 44)."²⁴⁵

The death of Samuel 25:1

Samuel's years of being a blessing to all Israel ended at this time. David took his place as God's major channel of blessing to the nation. It is appropriate that the notice of Samuel's death occurs here since Saul had just admitted publicly that David would be Israel's next king (24:20). Samuel's ministry of providing a transition to the monarchy had therefore ended. People all over Israel mourned Samuel's death. Samuel was the last of the judges. David would probably have continued Samuel's ministry and become Israel's first king without the hiatus of Saul's tragic reign if Israel had not insisted on having a king prematurely.

"Since the days of Moses and Joshua, no man had arisen to whom the covenant nation owed so much as to Samuel, who has been justly called the reformer and restorer of the theocracy."²⁴⁶

²⁴⁴Youngblood, p. 752.

²⁴⁵John Stek, *The Former Prophets: A Syllabus*, p. 65A. Quoted by Youngblood, p. 752.

²⁴⁶Keil and Delitzsch, p. 238.

This chapter opens with one disappointment for David, the death of his mentor, and it closes with another, the departure of his mate (v. 44). This suggests that the events of chapter 25 took place when David was at a low point in his life emotionally. This may account for the fact that David did not conduct himself completely honorably at this time. He is not the hero of this chapter. Abigail is. God used a woman to avert a tragedy in Israel's history (cf. Judg. 4; 2 Sam. 14:2-20; 20:16-22).

The wilderness of Paran to which David fled next lay just southeast of Maon (v. 2).

David's request of Nabal 25:2-8

Both Maon and Carmel (meaning "Garden Spot") stood about 14 miles west of Engedi and about 7 miles south-southeast of Hebron. The reference to Nabal's 3,000 sheep may be an allusion to Saul's 3,000 soldiers (24:2). As the story unfolds, we will discover many similarities between Nabal and Saul, and the writer may have dropped this and other clues to help the reader compare the two men. He used a literary device called narrative analogy in which ironic parallelisms abound.²⁴⁷

"Nabal" must have been a nickname since it means "fool" in Hebrew. Nabal was a descendant of Caleb who had received Hebron and its environs as his inheritance from Joshua (Josh. 15:13). Nabal was unlike his ancestor in many ways. He was foolish, but Caleb was wise. Nabal did not take God into account, but Caleb counted on God's promises. Nabal opposed God's purposes and died prematurely, but Caleb cooperated with God and lived long.

The Old Testament prophets regarded those who are ungodly, namely, those who do not take God into account, as fools (Ps. 14:1; Prov. 18:2, 7; Isa. 32:6). God promised to punish the ungodly (Deut. 28). Therefore He will punish fools (vv. 25-26).

The contrast between Nabal and Abigail could not be stronger. He was foolish; she was wise. He was evil; she was good. He was repulsive; she was attractive. He was arrogant; she was humble. He was ungodly; she was godly. He was antagonistic; she was peacemaking. They were one of the mismatched odd couples of the books of Samuel along with Hannah and Elkanah, and David and Michal. The rabbis considered Abigail one of seven women in the Old Testament whom the Holy Spirit had graced unusually.²⁴⁸

"The story of the stupid shepherd with a beautiful and intelligent wife is one of the most delightful in Samuel. Its purpose is to lay one more brick in the edifice of David's legitimacy, however, and not to entertain."²⁴⁹

²⁴⁷Robert P. Gordon, "David's Rise and Saul's Demise: Narrative Analogy in 1 Samuel 24—26," *Tyndale Bulletin* 31 (1980):42-43.

²⁴⁸Jon D. Levenson, "1 Samuel 25 as Literature and as History," *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 40 (1978):231.

²⁴⁹Heater, "Young David . . .," p. 56.

David's armed followers had been patrolling the wilderness of Paran in Judah where Nabal's shepherds had been tending his flocks. They had made that area safe from raiding Amalekites, Philistines, and occasional wild animals that might have harassed Nabal's shepherds. It was only common courtesy that wealthy Nabal would have expressed his appreciation to David by providing some food for David's men. Sheep-shearing was a happy time for shepherds and usually involved feasting (cf. 2 Sam. 13:23-24).²⁵⁰ We can see in these verses that David, as one committed to the Mosaic Law and as the Lord's anointed, was a blessing and an indirect source of fertility to his companions.

By referring to himself as Nabal's "son" (v. 8) David was placing himself in a subordinate position to Nabal. David had earlier called Saul his "father" (cf. 24:11, 16). This is another clue that suggests that the writer wanted us to view Nabal as Saul's alter ego. One writer suggested that David's request for food and his reference to himself as Nabal's "son" implied more.

"This would seem to be an instance of negotiation with an invitation to Nabal to enter into a regulated covenant with David."²⁵¹

Nabal's foolish response to David 25:9-13

Nabal was a political loyalist who regarded David simply as a rebel. Perhaps he felt that David was running a protection racket to finance his outlaw way of life. More probably, I think, miserly Nabal simply did not want to part with anything that he had (cf. Luke 7:44-47). He failed to admit that David had been a blessing to him. He also refused to acknowledge David as the Lord's anointed. Ironically Nabal's servants were about to abandon him, the very thing he falsely accused David of doing to Saul (v. 10; cf. 22:7-8).²⁵²

David overreacted to Nabal's insulting rebuff (v. 13). He prepared to attack and kill every male in Nabal's household that very night (vv. 22, 34)

A servant's appeal to Abigail 25:14-17

Nabal's servant appealed to Abigail to reverse Nabal's orders. He testified that God had blessed Nabal's shepherds greatly through David. David's soldiers had been a wall of protection for them (v. 16). One of the characteristics of a fool is that he or she does not listen to other people (v. 17). Nabal was such a fool that he did not even listen to God. If he had, he would have known that David was the Lord's anointed servant (cf. v. 30).

The Hebrew words for "good" and "evil" each occur seven times in chapter 25 (vv. 3, 8, 15, 21, 30, 31, 36, and 3, 17, 21, 26, 34, 39 [twice]).²⁵³

²⁵⁰Baldwin, p. 147. Cf. v. 8.

²⁵¹D. J. Wiseman, "Is it peace?—Covenant and Diplomacy," *Vetus Testamentum* 32:3 (1982):318.

²⁵²Levenson, p. 225.

²⁵³Gunn, p. 96.

"Together they underscore one of the major themes of the story: Good brings its own reward, while evil recoils on the head of the wicked."²⁵⁴

Abigail's preparations for appealing to David 25:18-22

As Abimelech had done earlier (21:4), Abigail prepared to sustain the Lord's anointed and his men with food.²⁵⁵ Was it proper for her to do this without telling her husband? I would say that it was since she was attempting to save Nabal's life. If she had told him, he probably would not have permitted her to go and would have died at David's hand as a result.

Abigail's appeal to David 25:23-31

Abigail's approach to David was a model of tact and courage. Visualize this solitary woman riding a donkey approaching 400 armed men who were riding horses and were bent on slaughtering her household. It took immense courage and boldness as well as great wisdom for Abigail to take her life in her hands and to do what she did.

First, Abigail took all the blame for her husband's foolish actions on herself. In this she reminds us of Jesus Christ who also rode into the teeth of His enemies on a donkey, took on Himself the sins of generations of fools, and was willing to suffer the consequences unselfishly. Abigail begged David to listen to her; her own husband would not (cf. v. 17). Nabal had proudly described David as a runaway servant (v. 10), but Abigail presented herself humbly as a servant to David (v. 24).

She described her husband as a fool (v. 25). Is this how a wife should speak of her husband, even if he is a fool? Perhaps she meant that in responding to David as he had Nabal had substantiated what others called him. If David had interpreted her description of her husband as disloyal, it is doubtful that David would have asked her to marry him later (v. 40). She might have proved disloyal to him too.

Abigail proceeded to help David view his situation from God's perspective. She referred to the Lord as the One who, in response to her words, was restraining him from shedding innocent blood (v. 26). She was anticipating David's proper response to her appeal. She further wished that all who opposed David, as Nabal had done, would be ineffective. She presented her gift of food and asked for David's forgiveness, again as the substitute for her husband (v. 28; cf. v. 24). She believed that Yahweh would give David an enduring dynasty because he fought the Lord's battles (v. 28), not just Saul's battles, and because David would do the Lord's will. In this she again anticipated David's proper response to her request. She believed God would preserve David alive, a blessing promised in the Mosaic Law for those who obeyed God.

²⁵⁴Youngblood, p. 753.

²⁵⁵Compare Jacob's similar scheme to placate Esau (Gen. 32:13-21).

Shepherds carried two bundles, one in which they carried food for themselves and the other in which they placed stones to hurl at the enemies of their sheep.²⁵⁶ This figurative description of David as kept by God rather than thrown out by Him would have appealed to David as a shepherd. Abigail also believed that David would reign as king one day, which she had learned that God had revealed (v. 30).²⁵⁷ She anticipated that day and viewed David as having a good conscience then for not taking vengeance against Nabal, since vengeance belongs to God. Often the early sins of leaders come back to haunt them when they finally attain office.

"He [David] was about to attack fellow Judeans and wipe out a whole family. This act would surely have brought reprobation on David and would have undone all his carefully crafted relationships with his fellow Israelites."²⁵⁸

Abigail concluded with a request that David would remember her when he attained his throne (v. 31; cf. Gen. 40:14). In all that she said, Abigail revealed a godly perspective that was totally absent in her husband (cf. Elkanah).²⁵⁹

Abigail was careful "neither to exculpate Nabal nor to appear disloyal to him. . . . In short, she must win David without betraying Nabal. Abigail devises the perfect solution to the dilemma: she intercedes on behalf of Nabal (v. 24), although conceding that he has no case and no hope of survival (vv. 25-26). In other words, while overtly defending him, she covertly dissociates herself from him."²⁶⁰

David's response to Abigail's appeal 25:32-35

David heard the Lord's voice behind Abigail's words. Consequently he blessed the Lord, her discernment, and her. God had used David's conscience to keep him from killing Saul (24:5), and now He had used Abigail's appeal to keep him from killing Nabal. Wise David, who listened to the words of a strange woman, contrasts with foolish Nabal, who would not listen to the words of his wise wife or his fearful servants. Thus godly Abigail, another wise person, became a blessing to David. Earlier he, a godly person, had been a blessing to her and her household. She kept him from sinning (v. 33). In return he blessed her further by sparing the males of Nabal's household (v. 35).

²⁵⁶G. M. Mackie, *Bible Manners and Customs*, p. 33.

²⁵⁷Samuel had recognized David as the future king (16:12), then Jonathan did (20:15), then Saul did (24:20), and now Abigail did.

²⁵⁸Heater, "Young David . . .," p. 56.

²⁵⁹There are many similarities between Abigail's appeal to David here and the appeal of the wise woman of Tekoa in 2 Sam. 14:1-20. Cf. D. M. Gunn, "Traditional composition in the 'Succession Narrative,'" *Vetus Testamentum* 26:2 (1976):221-22.

²⁶⁰Levenson, p. 230.

Nabal's response to the news of Abigail's appeal 25:36-38

When she returned home, Abigail discovered that her foolish husband was drunk from celebrating. He was totally oblivious to his mortal danger. He was feasting rather than fasting. He was behaving like a king, the ultimate authority, rather than as a servant of the next king (cf. v. 24). Here is another allusion to the similarity between Nabal and Saul who both viewed themselves proudly as kings. Pride was the root of Nabal's folly as well as Saul's folly, and it preceded destruction in both of their cases.

Abigail wisely waited until morning before telling her husband what a close brush he had had with death. By then the wine had gone out of him. The writer made a clever play on words here. The Hebrew word for wineskin in *nebel*. It is as though he was suggesting that Nabal was a *nebel*. When the wine had gone out of him, he was nothing. The writer may even have been suggesting that all there was to Nabal was his bladder, his personal wineskin.²⁶¹

Nabal's heart died within him when he finally realized what a fool he had been. The Hebrews used the heart metaphorically to describe the seat of courage. No courage remained in him. Nabal further appears to have gone catatonic; when he realized what had happened, the shock immobilized him. Ten days later he died. The writer gave God the credit for terminating his life prematurely. Sometimes people who fail to respond to the will of God die prematurely (cf. ch. 31; 1 Cor. 11:30; 1 John 5:16).

God struck Nabal dead for his pride and opposition to the Lord's anointed. God would do the same to Saul for the same reasons. Nabal's death undoubtedly encouraged David to believe that God would take vengeance on Saul. David's experiences with Nabal were a microcosm of all that he had been enduring for so long with Saul, another fool. Saul admitted he was a fool in 26:21.

David's marriage to Abigail 25:39-43

David thanked God for vindicating him and for preventing him from doing evil. Abigail had been the instrument that God had used to do this (v. 39). It was proper for David to give thanks since he had left Nabal in the Lord's hands and had not sought revenge.

It is easy to see why David found Abigail so attractive. Not only was she intelligent (cf. 2 Chron. 30:22; Ps. 111:10; Prov. 13:15) and beautiful (v. 3; cf. Gen. 29:17; Esth. 2:7), but she was also a soul sister with David (cf. Jonathan). She shared his view of life and his commitment to God. However since from creation God's will has been monogamy (Gen. 2:24), it was wrong for him to marry her (v. 39). He had also previously married Ahinoam of Jezreel (v. 43). Perhaps he justified his second marriage with the fact that Saul had taken Michal from him (v. 44). Perhaps he got into polygamy also because it was customary in the ancient Near East for great warriors and monarchs to have many wives and concubines (mistresses). Yet God forbade this of Israel's kings (Deut. 17:17).

²⁶¹David had earlier vowed, literally, that he would not leave anyone who urinated against the wall (i.e., any male) in Nabal's household alive (v. 22). The writer pictured Nabal in the most uncomplimentary terms.

In any case David did not restraint himself in his relations with women, and this caused him major problems later in his life. The same words "sent" and "took her" appear both here (v. 40) and in the account of David's affair with Bathsheba (2 Sam. 11:4). We see here the seed problem that bore bitter fruit in David's adultery.

Should Abigail have agreed to become David's wife? It appears that she had a choice (v. 42). I do not believe she should have agreed to marry a man who was already married to someone else (Gen. 2:24), if she was truly free to decide. Abigail may have felt a need for security since her husband had died, and David was an attractive man with whom she shared much in common. Furthermore he was destined to become king. Yet he was married. Her decision is certainly understandable, though not commendable.

David's loss of his wife 25:44

As mentioned before, this chapter opens and closes with a tragedy in David's life, the death of Samuel and the departure of Michal. Evidently Saul considered David as good as dead, and so, sometime during these events, he gave David's wife to another man. He may also have done this to remove the possibility of David's claiming Saul's throne because he was Saul's son-in-law. David later reclaimed Michal (2 Sam. 3:13-16), which proved to be a source of grief to David since Michal did not appreciate how David constantly bowed to Yahweh's authority (cf. 2 Sam. 6:16-23; 1 Chron. 15:29).

We can learn a great deal from wise Abigail. We can see how a godly person responds to a spouse's folly: by preserving and protecting the spouse rather than by ignoring the folly. We see how a godly person responds to a foolish spouse: by honoring him or her rather than by despising him or her. We see how a godly person responds to favors bestowed: by returning them generously rather than by taking them for granted. We see how a godly person responds to other godly people: by helping them rather than by opposing them. We see how a godly person responds to being vulnerable: by sacrificing oneself for others rather than by becoming arrogant. We see how a godly person responds to the threat of danger: by trusting in God and behaving wisely rather than by ignoring the danger. We see how a godly person responds to the desire for security. In this last lesson Abigail is a negative example rather than a positive one. We do so by relying on God to provide legitimately rather than by seizing security.

David's second sparing of Saul's life ch. 26

Again the scene shifts to Saul (cf. ch. 24). The writer contrasted his improper attitudes and behavior and their consequences with David's proper attitudes and behavior and their consequences. There are many similarities between this chapter and chapter 24, which records David's sparing of Saul's life in the cave of Adullam. Perhaps the most significant difference is that in chapter 24 David was on the defensive whereas in chapter 26 he was on the offensive. Chapter 26 is the third and final episode in the mini-section on David's treatment of two fools: Saul and Nabal. A prominent theme in this pericope is David's learning to trust God to repay his enemies rather than taking vengeance himself.

The general structure of the chapter is chiasitic.

- "A. Saul searches for David, who then responds (vv. 1-5).
- B. David keeps his man Abishai from killing Saul (vv. 6-12).
- B'. David rebukes Saul's man Abner for not protecting Saul (vv. 13-16).
- A'. Saul talks to David, who then responds (vv. 17-25)."²⁶²

Saul's encampment near the hill of Hachilah 26:1-5

The Ziphites betrayed David a second time (cf. 23:19). David was again hiding by the hill of Hachilah (23:19). When Saul came down from Gibeah with his 3,000 (or three military units of) soldiers, he camped near the main road. David had only 600 men (23:13; 25:13). David evidently stayed on the other side of the hill (v. 3). Perhaps he went up on the hill at night to survey Saul's encampment and there spotted Saul and Abner in the middle of the camp (v. 5). Saul should have been very secure surrounded as he was by his men, but really he was very vulnerable (cf. v. 12).

Abishai's offer to kill Saul 26:6-12

Ahimelech the Hittite may have been a foreign mercenary (cf. Uriah the Hittite, 2 Sam. 11:3). The writer may have mentioned him to show the extent of David's appeal. Abishai was David's nephew, one of the sons of his sister Zeruah (cf. 1 Chron. 2:15-16). Joab, who later became David's commander-in-chief, was Abishai's brother.

Saul had used his spear to attack David three times (cf. 18:10; 19:9-10; 20:33). It was, therefore, an instrument of death. It was also the symbol of Saul's rule similar to a scepter (cf. 22:6). Abishai's viewpoint was carnal. He concluded that because God had given David the upper hand he should use it to do away with his rival (v. 8; cf. 24:4). David had used similar words when he promised to kill Goliath (cf. 17:46) as had Saul in describing how he would kill David with his spear (cf. 18:11).

David believed, however, that since God had anointed Saul it was not his place to do him harm (v. 9; cf. 24:6-7). His reply to Abishai begins (v. 9) and ends (v. 11) with the reason David would not permit Abishai to kill Saul: he was the Lord's anointed. In the middle of this reply David mentioned alternative ways by which God might terminate Saul's life (v. 10). He might die from some physical affliction as Nabal had (cf. 25:38), or of natural causes, or in battle (cf. ch. 31). David reminded Abishai that God could deal with Saul without their help.

David's reason for entering Saul's camp was not to kill him but to teach him a lesson. By taking Saul's spear David would teach the king that he had the power of death but chose to spare Saul's life rather than taking it. This symbolic act also communicated that the right to rule would be David's eventually. By taking his water jug, a life-giving vessel

²⁶²Youngblood, p. 767.

since life in the Judean wilderness depended on drinking water, David taught him that he had the power to take Saul's life. Perhaps the jug of water also symbolized that refreshment and blessing would also be David's portion from the Lord. It was really the Lord who defended David by making Saul and all of his men sleep soundly (v. 12).

David's rebuke of Abner 26:13-16

David crossed a ravine to put some distance between himself and Saul. David addressed Abner because he was responsible for leaving the Lord's anointed unprotected. The person who came to destroy Saul was Abishai (v. 15; cf. v. 8). David, rather than Saul's bodyguard Abner, was responsible for sparing his life. Abner deserved to die for his failure in duty, but David spared his life, too. David more faithfully defended Saul's life than even Saul's most trusted servant.

David's appeal to Saul 26:17-20

Evidently the realization that David or Abishai again could have killed him but did not led Saul to respond to David tenderly calling him his son (v. 17; cf. vv. 21, 25). Indeed, David had behaved as a loyal son toward Saul. David, however, did not now address Saul as his father, as he had previously (cf. 24:11). He had come to view Saul less affectionately since he continued to hound David without cause after repeated promises to stop doing so. Moreover Saul was no longer David's father-in-law (cf. 25:44).

David said that if violation of the Mosaic Law had prompted Saul to hunt him down he was ready to offer the sacrifice the Law prescribed to atone for it (v. 19). However if David's enemies had stirred up Saul's hostility without cause, David prayed that God would judge them for that. Saul's attacks had resulted in David's separation from the Lord's inheritance (i.e., the blessings God had given Israel, especially rest in the Promised Land) since he had to live as a fugitive. David's enemies had in effect encouraged him to abandon Yahweh by driving him out of his home territory (v. 19).²⁶³ The common conception in the ancient Near East was that gods ruled areas. Evidently some people were saying that because David had departed from his area the Lord would not protect him. David appeared to be seeking the protection of other gods by living in areas that they supposedly controlled (e.g., Philistia and Moab).²⁶⁴ This looked like David was violating the first commandment (Exod. 20:3). Nevertheless David wanted to live and die in the center of God's will and presence (v. 20).

David again compared himself to a mere flea, essentially harmless but annoying to Saul (v. 20; cf. 24:14). He was making a word play on Abner's question, "Who are you who calls (Heb. *qarata*) to the king?" (v. 14) by referring to himself as a "partridge" (v. 20, Heb. *haqqore*, lit. caller-bird). The partridge darts from one bush to another when a hunter pursues it, as David had been doing, though it tires fairly quickly and then can be

²⁶³On the possibility that God had incited Saul to seek David's life, and the larger issue of God's use of deception to judge sinners, see Chisholm, "Does God Deceive?" pp. 11-12, 19-21.

²⁶⁴See Youngblood, *Faith of Our Fathers*, p. 84; Daniel Isaac Block, *The Gods of the Nations: Studies in Ancient Near Eastern National Theology*.

caught easily.²⁶⁵ David's point in comparing himself to a partridge and a flea was that Saul's search for such an insignificant person as David was beneath his dignity.

David's trust in God 26:21-25

Saul again confessed that he had sinned, as he had done when he had sacrificed at Gilgal (v. 21; cf. 15:24, 30) and when David had spared his life in the cave (24:17). Nevertheless he seems to have failed again to follow through with genuine repentance (cf. 27:1). He also admitted that he had played the fool (similar to Nabal) and had committed a serious error.²⁶⁶ The writer did not record Saul as having gone this far in admitting his faults in the preceding chapters.

David returned Saul's spear to him (v. 22) and with it the symbol of the right to rule. Perhaps David did not return the jug of water to remind Saul that he still had the power to end Saul's life. He was confident God would repay each of them eventually, and he determined to wait for Him to do so (v. 23). David acknowledged that Yahweh was his real deliverer (v. 24).²⁶⁷ Saul could have overwhelmed David's smaller band of followers. Instead he departed with a prophetic declaration of David's final success (v. 25; cf. 24:20). The text does not record another meeting of David and Saul before Saul died.

The main lesson of chapter 26 appears in verse 23: "the Lord will repay" (cf. Prov. 20:22; 24:29; Rom. 12:17, 19). The Lord Jesus Christ is our greatest example of one who trusted the Father to vindicate Him (cf. Luke 23:46). Our vindication does not always come in this lifetime, as David's did. Sometimes it comes after death, as Jesus' did. Another great revelation is God's patience with Saul. God gave him many opportunities to repent and to experience God's blessing within the sphere of his judgment (cf. 15:26), but Saul did not repent.

David had borne witness twice to Saul's guilt before God (chs. 24 and 26; cf. Num. 35:30). God proceeded to put him to death not long after this (ch. 31). David became God's instrument in passing judgment on Saul for his sin and so became a blessing to all Israel.

4. The end of Saul's reign chs 27—31

David's commitment to God resulted in his continuing to be God's instrument of blessing to the Israelites and His instrument of judgment to Israel's enemies. This was true in spite of David's failure to seek guidance from the Lord before moving back into Philistine territory. David's strength continued to grow as Saul's continued to wane. In these last chapters of 1 Samuel the writer moved back and forth first describing David's activities, and then Saul's, then David's, and then Saul's. This technique puts the fates of the two

²⁶⁵Youngblood, "1, 2 Samuel," p. 771.

²⁶⁶Contrast Paul's testimony in 2 Tim. 4:7.

²⁶⁷This may have been the occasion when David composed Psalm 54 (see its title) the last verse of which ascribes David's deliverance from his enemies to Yahweh.

men in stark contrast side by side. Thus the book closes with the narrative contrast technique with which it opened in which the writer contrasted Samuel and Eli's sons.

David's return to Philistia ch. 27

David's relocation to Ziklag 27:1-7

Was it God's will for David to leave Israel and move to Philistia? The text does not say, but there are indications that lead me to believe that he should not have done this even though he must have felt almost forced to do so. First, there is the statement that David consulted with himself, but he had previously asked God for guidance in prayer (cf. 23:2, 4). Second, David said he believed he would die if he remained in Israel. Yet Samuel had anointed him as Israel's next king (16:13), Jonathan had said twice that David would be king (18:4; 23:17), as had Saul (24:20; 26:25), and so had Abigail (25:30). Saul's most recent statement about this occurs in the verse immediately preceding verse one. Third, the name of God does not appear in this chapter suggesting that David did not get his guidance from the Lord. David's faith in God's ability to keep him safe seems to have lapsed temporarily. The stress and strain of his hide-and-seek existence with no end in view seem to have worn on David. In addition, he had another wife to take care of now (25:42). This led him to seek refuge from Saul in Philistia again (cf. 21:10-15). This was only a weakness in trust, however, not disobedience to the revealed will of God.

Why would David have been welcome in Philistia? Probably Achish and the other Philistine lords rejoiced to see the rift that existed between David and Saul.

"Without David, Saul lacked military leadership sufficient to eliminate the Philistine threat; without Saul, David lacked a power base from which to operate."²⁶⁸

"Secondly, Achish realized that as soon as David did attack his own people, he would lose for ever the possibility of changing sides."²⁶⁹

Consequently Achish was willing for David and his men to live in Philistia apparently as mercenaries (cf. 2 Sam. 10:6; 15-18-22). Gath stood about 27 miles west-northwest of Ziph. David's move was a fairly major relocation of his forces and his family (v. 3); he evidently planned to stay in Philistia until God disposed of Saul. Since David now enjoyed Philistine protection, Saul no longer searched for him. Saul would have had to take on the Philistines to get to David, and Saul did not want to do that. David must have looked like the frustrated leader of an ineffective *coup d'état* to Achish. Anyone who was the enemy of Saul was the friend of Achish. David pretended to be more of a servant to Achish than he really was (v. 5).

Ziklag evidently stood on the southwestern edge of Philistia about 27 miles south-southwest of Gerar, but its exact site is not certain.²⁷⁰ It continued under Israelite control

²⁶⁸Merrill, *Kingdom of . . .*, p. 219.

²⁶⁹David Payne, p. 140.

from the time David moved there until David incorporated it into his kingdom. This town became David's headquarters until he moved to Hebron 16 months later (v. 7; cf. 2 Sam. 1:1). In Ziklag David could come and go without constant observation by the Philistines who lived mainly to the north of Ziklag.

David's raids to the south 27:8-12

David used his opportunity to defeat and to annihilate the common enemies of Israel and the Philistines that lived to Israel's southwest. David did not leave any survivors, as the Lord had commanded (Deut. 3:18-20; Josh. 1:13). He was clearing the Promised Land of foreign foes so the Israelites could occupy it. David walked a thin line of deception but was able to convince Achish that his victories were for the welfare of the Philistines and the detriment of Israel. Really he was conquering Israel's surrounding enemies, but he gave Achish the impression that his raids were against the southern portions in Judah. David continued to subdue Israel's enemy neighbors later when he became king (2 Sam. 8). Achish believed that David had alienated himself from the Israelites and would therefore be loyal to him from then on (v. 12; cf. 17:9).

"Like Nabal [in 25:10], Achish seriously underestimates David by regarding him as a servant or slave."²⁷¹

The Philistines' preparations for war against Israel 28:1-2

David's response to Achish was deliberately ambiguous. He did not promise to fight for the Philistines but gave the impression he would (v. 2). Achish interpreted David's words as a strong commitment to him and rewarded David with a position as his bodyguard for life.

David continued to be a blessing to Israel as he obeyed God in Ziklag without giving any real help to Israel's enemy, the Philistines. This plan of David's, while yielding some positive benefits, involved him in deception and lying plus leaving him vulnerable to Achish if the Philistine king had learned what was really happening.

This whole pericope illustrates that when opposition from ungodly people persists God's people should continue to pray and to trust Him for protection rather than taking matters into our own hands. If we initiate a plan without seeking God's guidance, we may remove one source of aggravation and danger only to find ourselves in another. Such plans may result in some good, but they may also put us in situations where we find it even more tempting to disobey God (cf. Jacob). We should, instead, remember God's promises (e.g., 1 Pet. 1:3-9; 2 Pet. 1:2-4) and pray for His guidance (cf. Phil. 4:6-7).

²⁷⁰J. D. Ray, "Two Etymologies: Ziklag and Phicol," *Vetus Testamentum* (July 1986):355-58.

²⁷¹Miscall, p. 165. Cf. Gunn, *The Fate . . .*, p. 107.

Saul's attempt to secure divine guidance from a medium 28:3-25

The story involving Saul's meeting with the "witch" of En-dor is one of the best known in 1 Samuel. It contains some unique events that have troubled Bible students for many years. Again the spotlight of revelation turns back to Saul from David. We see here the spiritual insensibility of Saul due to his departure from God.

"This visit to the medium of Endor is cited by the Chronicler as proof positive that Saul deserved the judgment that fell on him at Gilboa (1 Ch. 10:13)."²⁷²

The threat of Philistine attack 28:3-7

Samuel's death and the mention of Saul's commendable removal of mediums and spiritists prepare for what follows (cf. Lev. 19:3; Deut. 18:11). Mediums are people who communicate with the dead, and spiritists are those who communicate with evil spirits. The terms always go together in the Old Testament indicating the close relationship that exists between these activities. The Mosaic Law prescribed death for mediums and spiritists because God promised to give His people all the information He wanted them to have about the future from prophets (Deut. 18). It was unwise, even dangerous and therefore forbidden, for them to seek more information from these other sources.

Shunem lay on the south slope of the hill of Moreh that occupied part of the eastern end of the Jezreel plain in Issachar's territory. Gilboa lay opposite it to the south and was really the name of a mountain. This was the same area where Gideon had routed the Midianites (Judg. 7).

"The wording of this introduction (28:4f.) is notable, for it is strongly reminiscent of two other fateful confrontations between Saul and the Philistines, the first at Michmash/Gilgal (13:5f.), the second at Socoh/Elah (17:1f., 11)."²⁷³

Saul again feared the Philistines (v. 5). If this enemy succeeded, they would cut Israel in half geographically. God gave Saul no guidance in response to his prayers. Since Saul had refused to listen to God in the past (chs. 13; 15), God now refused to listen to him (cf. v. 18). He gave the king no revelation about how to proceed. Normally when people refuse to pay attention to the word of God, it becomes increasingly difficult for them to hear the word of God (cf. Jer. 7:13-16).

Saul then proceeded to try to obtain information about the future, specifically about the imminent encounter with the Philistines, from another supernatural source. Publicly Saul was against these diviners (v. 3), but privately he now sought one out. This is hypocrisy.

²⁷²Gordon, *I & II Samuel* . . . , p. 192.

²⁷³Gunn, *The Fate* . . . , p. 108.

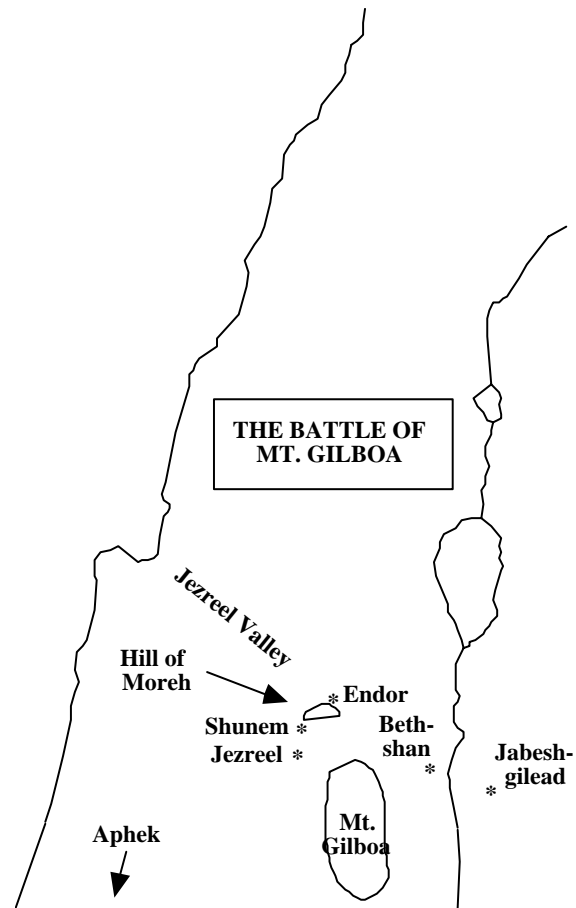
"... Saul's attempts at inquiry were of so unworthy a nature that it would be an abuse of language to speak of him as really 'inquiring of Jehovah.'"²⁷⁴

Endor stood on the north slope of the hill of Moreh, on the other side from that on which the Philistines camped.

Saul's conversation with the medium 28:8-14

Evidently Saul knew the woman would not cooperate with him if she knew who he was, so he disguised himself (v. 8). He further hid his hypocrisy by visiting her under cover of darkness. Saul sank so low as to swear to the woman in the Lord's name that he would not punish her for breaking the Lord's Law (v. 10). This too was hypocrisy. He wanted to give a public impression of upholding the Mosaic Law, but really he broke it by seeking her out. Saul asked her to bring Samuel up from Sheol, the place of departed spirits.

I think it is most likely that God allowed Samuel, or a vision or apparition of Samuel, to appear as the text states (vv. 12, 15, 16) with another prophecy from the Lord (vv. 16-19). The woman also saw who Saul really was, and this surprise terrified her because she discovered that her life was in danger. Some interpreters have concluded that a demon who impersonated Samuel came up. However what this being proceeded to say in verses 16-19 argues against this. It was a message from God. Others have suggested that the woman tricked Saul into thinking that the person he saw was Samuel, but he was not. However her own surprise argues against this view (v. 12).²⁷⁵ This seems to have been a divine revelation to Saul, the last one God gave him.²⁷⁶



"The incident does not tell us anything about the veracity of claims to consult the dead on the part of mediums, because the indications are that

²⁷⁴John W. Haley, *An Examination of the Alleged Discrepancies of the Bible*, pp. 359-60.

²⁷⁵See *ibid.*, pp. 194-95; Archer, *Encyclopedia of . . .*, pp. 180-81.

²⁷⁶See Keil and Delitzsch, pp. 265-69.

this was an extraordinary event for her, and a frightening one because she was not in control."²⁷⁷

Saul assured the medium that she need not fear him. Any supernatural guidance he could obtain with her help was worth her life to him. She described Samuel as a divine being (Heb. *elohim*, lit. strong one). This is, of course, a common name of God in the Old Testament. However it also describes the judges in Israel who were divine beings in the sense that they served as judges under the Great Judge (Ps. 82:6; cf. John 10:35). Perhaps the woman meant that the man she saw looked like a judge or like a divine being because he was imposing. Samuel was one of the judges in Israel. She saw Samuel, or his apparition, coming up out of the earth (i.e., the netherworld). The ancients connected the area under the surface of the earth with the place of departed spirits because they buried people under the surface of the earth.

The writer identified Samuel as old and wrapped in a robe (v. 14). This in an interesting detail since Saul had previously torn Samuel's robe when Samuel announced that God had rejected Saul from being king (15:27). Samuel had told Saul, "The Lord has torn the kingdom of Israel from you today" (15:28; cf. 24:4). Saul recognized Samuel and bowed before him out of respect. This too was hypocritical since he had not previously obeyed Samuel nor was he about to act on the warning that Samuel would soon give him.

Saul's conversation with Samuel 28:15-19

Samuel's soul had been at peace in the place of departed spirits, but now Saul had disturbed that rest. Saul described his reason for doing so. He wanted to obtain divine guidance concerning the Philistines from Samuel since he could not get it from the Lord through other means. Samuel replied that Saul was wrong in thinking that Samuel would tell him what strategy to use since the Lord would not. The prophet was, after all, simply the mouthpiece of God. The Lord had become Saul's real adversary, rather than the Philistines, since the king had refused to obey Yahweh. Samuel repeated God's judgment on Saul: ". . . the Lord has torn the kingdom out of your hand and given it to your neighbor, to David" (v. 17; cf. 15:27-28).

Samuel also explained that the Lord had ceased speaking to Saul because Saul had stopped listening to God. Specifically he had failed to obey the Lord by slaying Amalek (ch. 15). Samuel's final revelation was that Yahweh would hand His people over to the Philistines tomorrow, and Saul and his sons would die in the battle. They would soon be with Samuel in Sheol, the place of departed spirits. Yahweh was still the true king of Israel and would control the destiny of His people, even His king, though Saul always wanted to be the ultimate authority in Israel.

The reason God told the Israelites not to consult the spirit world was that He promised to reveal what was best for them to know about the future through prophets (Deut. 18:9-22). There are some things concerning the future about which we are better off ignorant. Samuel had knowledge of Saul's future, but he was a prophet. Nothing in Scripture

²⁷⁷Baldwin, p. 159.

indicates that demons know any more about the future than what God has revealed to people. In this case Saul would probably have been better off not knowing he would die the next day. Yet knowing this he still went into battle evidently convinced he could alter the will of God as he had tried to do so many other times in his life. He still had not learned that Yahweh was his sovereign master.

Saul's failure to listen 28:20-25

Why did the writer give us so much information about this woman's concern for Saul? For one thing, it is another instance of the reversal of fortune motif that is so common in 1 and 2 Samuel. Saul should have executed the woman for witchcraft as the Law commanded, but instead she ministered to Saul. A disobedient medium became a source of blessing for the disobedient king. Saul had departed so far from God that even this woman, through whom he had just learned about his own death the next day, could nourish and refresh him.

Beyond this the similarity between the woman's words and Samuel's is striking. Samuel had said that because Saul had not obeyed God, God had done something to Saul (v. 18). The woman said that because she had obeyed Saul, Saul should do something for her (vv. 21-22).

"Saul realizes he has landed in a situation which resembles a covenant with the medium instead of with YHWH."²⁷⁸

Samuel's words terrified Saul, but they did not move him to listen and obey. Saul had not eaten and was physically weak. Perhaps he had been fasting to get a word from God. The woman reminded Saul that she had listened to the king's promise that no harm would come to her, and her conduct reflected her faith in him. She then begged him to listen to her and to eat something since he was so weak, but Saul would not listen to her as he had not listened to God. Only after prolonged entreaty by the medium and Saul's servants did the king concede to eat. This proved to be Saul's "last supper."²⁷⁹ What a contrast it is with the Last Supper of Jesus Christ, the vice-regent who always listened to and obeyed God faithfully. Saul ate this meal in dread as he anticipated death the next day whereas Jesus ate His Last Supper in perfect peace.

We would expect that with such a striking warning Saul would have withdrawn Israel's army and fled south toward Gibeah and safety, but he did not. He evidently still felt that he could oppose God's word and succeed. He went into battle the next day and perished. God removed His unfaithful anointed because he proved to be an insubordinate and inattentive vice-regent. He also disciplined the nation Saul represented by allowing the Philistines to defeat Israel.

²⁷⁸W. A. M. Beuken, "1 Samuel 28: The Prophet as 'Hammer of Witches,'" *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 6 (1978):8.

²⁷⁹Walter Brueggemann, *First and Second Samuel*, p. 196.

This pericope helps the reader appreciate the serious consequences of not listening to God's word and not obeying His will. Saul could not get guidance from God because God had ceased giving His rebellious servant directions. People sometimes cannot get guidance from God because they have been unwilling to listen to God and obey Him. He stops speaking to them. Saul then tried to get guidance from elsewhere. God graciously provided it to him in the form of a final warning, but Saul disregarded that too. He plunged forward to his death. Similarly Judas received a final warning from Jesus in the Upper Room, but he disregarded it and died within 24 hours. How important it is not to harden our hearts when God speaks to us (cf. Ps. 95:6-11; Heb. 3:7-8, 15; 4:7)!

Yahweh's providential protection of David ch. 29

As Saul reached the depth of his fortunes, David attained the height of his popularity thus far. This chapter seems to antedate the previous one slightly. The writer appears to have incorporated it in his narrative here to highlight the contrasts between Saul and David in chapters 27—31.

The Philistine commanders' fear of David 29:1-5

The lords or commanders of the Philistine city-states mustered their troops and marched north to the town of Aphek.²⁸⁰ Aphek stood near Philistia's northern border with Israel. The Philistine lords were on their way to the Jezreel Valley to battle King Saul. Jezreel was a town on the northwestern slope of Mt. Gilboa about three miles south of Shunem (cf. 28:4). David and his 600 mercenaries were bringing up the rear in the Philistine procession. The Philistine lords noticed David and his men and asked each other why Hebrew soldiers were accompanying them since they were going to war against the Israelites.²⁸¹ Achish, whom David had deceived into thinking that he was no longer loyal to Saul, came to his defense. David had lived in Philistia now for almost one year and four months (cf. 27:7). The other Philistine kings could hardly believe how naive Achish was being. They saw that David would probably turn against them in the upcoming battle to regain acceptance with his lord, Saul. They proceeded to use the same phrase Achish had used to defend David, "Is this not David?" to impress on their gullible comrade what a danger David posed to them. David had not only slain many of Israel's enemies, including many Philistines, but he also enjoyed solidarity with Saul in the minds of all the people, which the song they quoted implied.²⁸²

David's exemption from the battle 29:6-11

Achish swore in Yahweh's name to David, probably to impress the truth of what he was saying on David, that David had been upright and pleasing to him. Nevertheless David

²⁸⁰It is interesting that the first place the Philistines mustered their troops for battle against the Israelites in this book was at Aphek (4:1), and the last place they did so that the writer recorded was also at Aphek. This indicates that Israel had not subdued her neighbor enemy effectively during Saul's reign because of his failure as her leader.

²⁸¹"Hebrew" is the common word that non-Israelites used to describe the Israelites, according to the Old Testament writers. It was an ethnic designation.

²⁸²Brueggemann, *First and . . .*, p. 198.

had not won the confidence of the other Philistine commanders, and so he had to return to Philistia. David again (cf. 17:29; 20:1; 26:18) asked, "What have I done?" He had done nothing to deserve this rejection. He then professed to want to go into the battle and to fight the enemies of "my lord the king." David probably wanted Achish to think that he was referring to Achish as "my lord," but he really meant Saul, I think. It seems incredible that David would really have entered the battle and fought for the Philistines against the Israelites. Thus David continued his deception. For the third time Achish vindicated David (vv. 3, 6, 9).²⁸³ David had been as a divine messenger to the Philistine king, a source of much blessing to him (cf. Gen. 12:2-3).²⁸⁴ Nevertheless the other Philistine rulers would not allow him to enter the battle. Consequently David had to return south with his men, the former servants of David's previous lord, Saul. David did as Achish ordered in the morning, and the Philistines proceeded north to engage Saul near Mt. Gilboa.

This chapter is an encouraging revelation of how God takes care of His own when they are under extreme stress. David had come close to running out of ideas about how he could preserve his life (cf. 27:1). He had apparently received no special guidance from God in answer to prayer. The name of God does not appear in chapter 27 or in chapter 29, except in Achish's references to Him, suggesting that God's guidance was scarce while David was in Philistine territory.²⁸⁵ David had even resorted to deception to protect himself (cf. 27:10-12; 29:8). Nonetheless God continued to guard His anointed servant, even in a foreign land. He convinced Achish of David's loyalty, which yielded a measure of protection for David. He also convinced the other Philistine lords of David's threat to themselves, which resulted in their sending him far from the scene of battle.

"The very same Philistines who will finally dispose of Saul (ch. 31) are the ones who unwittingly rescue David."²⁸⁶

In short, God providentially caused the reactions of people, as different as those reactions were, to protect David (cf. Rom. 8:28). Even when we do not sense it, God cares for us, as a shepherd (cf. Ps. 23). God takes care of His own, even when we are under great stress and are not entirely obedient.

David's wise leadership of the Israelites ch. 30

This chapter reveals many qualities that marked David as an outstanding leader. As Saul continued to decline, God perfected the characteristics of leadership in David that prepared him for the throne. The Amalekites' capture of Ziklag at first looked as if tragedy had struck, but later it proved to be a great blessing. In this respect this event

²⁸³Ibid., p. 200, saw a parallel with Pilate's threefold vindication of Jesus (John 18:38; 19:4, 6; cf. Luke 23:22).

²⁸⁴Miscall, p. 174, speculated that David may have shared the booty that he had taken in his battles against his southern enemies with Achish (cf. 27:7-10).

²⁸⁵Youngblood, "1, 2 Samuel," pp. 788-89.

²⁸⁶Brueggemann, *First and . . .*, p. 199.

resembled David's whole career. As a result of this victory, the people of Judah came to regard David as the obvious successor to Saul's throne.

The chiasmic structure of the chapter focuses attention on the defeat of the Amalekites, the people that God had commissioned Israel's leaders to annihilate.

- "A. David reaches destroyed Ziklag and finds it plundered (30:1-3).
- B. David and his men are promised the Lord's help (30:4-8).
- C. David defeats the Amalekites (30:9-20)
- B'. David shares the Lord's plunder with his men (30:21-25).
- A'. David returns to Ziklag and distributes the remaining plunder (30:26-31)."²⁸⁷

David's crisis and his response 30:1-6

David took three days to return from Aphek (29:11) to Ziklag. The Amalekites, whom David had previously raided (27:8), took advantage of the Philistines' and David's absence to retaliate in the Negev and on Ziklag. They plundered both Philistine and Judahite territory (v. 16). When David and his men arrived back home, they discovered Ziklag empty of inhabitants and burned down. David joined his men in weeping over the tragedy that the enemies of God's kingdom had caused (cf. Matt. 23:37). David's supporters then turned on him and almost stoned him giving him trouble on two fronts simultaneously. In his distress David, as usual, strengthened himself in the Lord by relying on Yahweh and inquiring of Him (vv. 6-8). From the Psalms we know that David often did this by looking back on God's past faithfulness, looking up in prayer, and looking forward with God's promises in view.

"David's genius was his spiritual resilience."²⁸⁸

"Both David and Saul are portrayed as persons in deep crises of leadership, and both are deeply at risk. What interests us is the difference of response. . . . Saul seeks refuge in a medium, [but David inquired of the Lord]."²⁸⁹

God's provision of guidance 30:7-10

David obtained an answer through the Urim and Thummim, which the high priest carried in the breastpiece of his ephod (cf. 23:2, 4, 9). God no longer responded to Saul's prayers (28:15), but He did answer David's (v. 8). David divided his troops into two groups as he had when he organized his attack against Nabal (25:13).²⁹⁰ The Besor brook is probably the Wadi el Arish, which flows west into the Mediterranean Sea a few miles south of

²⁸⁷Youngblood, "1, 2 Samuel," p. 791.

²⁸⁸Baldwin, p. 169.

²⁸⁹Brueggemann, *First and . . .*, p. 201.

²⁹⁰The many comparisons and contrasts between this chapter and chapter 25 point out the differences between foolish Nabal and wise David.

Ziklag. This stream marked the southwestern border of the land that God had promised to Abraham's descendants.

David's kindness to the Egyptian servant 30:11-15

David and his men were undoubtedly very angry and ready to kill anyone who proved to have had a hand in kidnapping their family members. To his credit David did not kill this Egyptian, as he planned to kill Nabal earlier. Instead he treated him kindly, in contrast to the Amalekite master's treatment of him, and won his favor and cooperation. Contrast Nabal's disdain for David, whom Nabal regarded as a runaway servant (25:10-11). The Egyptian wanted a guarantee of safety from David, as had Saul (cf. 24:2). Receiving this he agreed to lead David and his men to the Amalekites' camp.

David's successful victory over the Amalekites 30:16-20

The Amalekites were feasting on the plunder that they had taken even though the Egyptian servant had received nothing to eat or drink when he fell ill (cf. v. 12). David launched his attack early in the morning the next day and did not give up until night fell. Since 400 of the Amalekites escaped, the total number of David's soldiers (v. 10), they obviously had a much larger army than David did. The camel was the vehicle of choice at this time; it was the fastest means of transportation (cf. Judg. 7:12). David recovered everything substantial (cf. v. 16) that the Amalekites had taken plus booty from this enemy (cf. v. 26).

Sharing spoil with David's followers 30:21-25

The rest of the chapter describes the distribution of plunder from this battle. The amount of space the writer devoted to this revelation shows that he intended to stress it.

David returned to his 200 exhausted followers at the Besor brook and greeted them (cf. 17:22; 25:5-6).²⁹¹ Some of the soldiers who had participated in combat with the Amalekites did not want to share the booty with those who had guarded the baggage (cf. v. 24).²⁹² David, however, took a different view of things. He saw that God had given them the victory; this spoil was not essentially what the combat soldiers had won but what the Lord had given His people, along with protection (cf. 1 Cor. 3:8; Matt. 20:12-15). Yahweh was the real deliverer of Israel (cf. 17:46-47). Again, this illustrates David's perception of God's relation to Israel and to himself, which was so different from Saul's view. His generous policy of dividing the spoils of war so the non-combatants would receive a portion (vv. 24-31) was in harmony with the Mosaic Law (Num. 31:27). This policy further prepared the way for the Judahites' acceptance of David as Saul's successor.

²⁹¹David was a greeter who saw the importance of initiating friendly contact with others. The New Testament frequently exhorts believers to greet one another.

²⁹²Saul had had his critics too (cf. 10:27).

Sharing spoil with the Judahites 30:26-31

David also distributed some of the war plunder to the elders of Judah.²⁹³ He evidently did so because he viewed the booty as coming from the enemies of all Judah, even the enemies of the Lord (v. 26). He may have also done this to curry favor with the elders. They later anointed David king over the house of Judah (2 Sam. 2:4; 5:1-3). David's propensity to give made his new kingdom possible.²⁹⁴

"Many victorious kings have used surplus plunder to enrich themselves and to build grandiose palaces; David used these first spoils to show his gratitude to the citizens of those areas and towns in Judah where he and his men had wandered when being pursued by Saul."²⁹⁵

This chapter presents many qualities that mark strong, effective leadership. These include empathy (v. 4), faith (vv. 6, 8, 23, 26), decisiveness (v. 10), kindness (v. 12), persistence (v. 17), integrity (v. 23), fairness (v. 24), and generosity (vv. 21-31), to name a few. We can also see development in David's restraint compared to his dealings with Nabal (cf. ch. 25). David's effectiveness also contrasts with Saul's ineffectiveness as a leader.

"Saul, disobeying God's prophet, defeated the Amalekites but lost his kingdom (ch. 15); David, seeking God's will, defeats the Amalekites and embarks on his reign (ch. 30)."²⁹⁶

One of the strongest emphases in this chapter is David's generosity. When God gives blessings, His people should view them as His gifts to us. We should share them with our fellow spiritual warriors and with our fellow spiritual citizens (cf. Heb. 13:16; Rom. 12:13; 1 Cor. 12:14-26; Gal. 6:10).

The death of Saul ch. 31

The scene shifts back to Mt. Gilboa in the North. Saul's battle with the Philistines in this chapter may have been simultaneous with David's battle against the Amalekites in the previous one.

"Chapters 30 and 31 gain in poignancy and power if we regard their events as simultaneous. In the far south, David is anxious about his own and about spoil, while in the far north Saul and the Israelite army perish. . . . While David smites (*hikkah*) ['fought,' 30:17] the Amalekites, and they flee (*nus*) [30:17], the Philistines smite (*hikkah*) ['killed,' v. 2] Saul and his sons, and Israel flees (*nus*) [vv. 1, 7]."²⁹⁷

²⁹³See Youngblood, "1, 2 Samuel," p. 795, for the locations of the sites named in verses 27-30.

²⁹⁴Brueggemann, *First and . . .*, p. 206.

²⁹⁵David Payne, p. 153.

²⁹⁶Youngblood, "1, 2 Samuel," p. 791.

²⁹⁷Miscall, pp. 181-82.

The account of Saul's death here differs from the one that the Amalekite messenger gave David later, which the writer recorded in 2 Samuel 1. This one is quite clearly the factual one (cf. 1 Chron. 10).²⁹⁸

The battle of Mt Gilboa 31:1-6

God had announced that Saul would deliver His people from the hand of the Philistines (9:16). However, Saul frustrated God's purpose by not following the Lord faithfully. Consequently the Philistines got the better of Saul and his soldiers (cf. Josh. 1:7-9). This battle took place in 1011 B.C., the last year of Saul's reign. The name of God does not appear in this chapter perhaps suggesting that He had now given up Saul to the consequences of his apostasy (cf. Rom. 1).

Jonathan, a faithful son and subject of the king, followed his father into battle. The death of this godly man because of his father's sins seems unfair as well as tragic, but God permitted it. David would replace Saul on the throne. Another son of Saul, Ish-bosheth, also known as Eshbaal, must not have been present in the battle (cf. 2 Sam. 2:8, 10, 12; 3:8, 14-15; 4:5, 8, 12; 1 Chron. 8:33).

David had been Saul's armorbearer before he had to flee from Saul's presence (16:21). Saul, probably fearing that the Philistines would torture and abuse him,²⁹⁹ asked his armorbearer to kill him, but the young man refused to do so, as David had when he had opportunity. Why this armorbearer feared to kill Saul is unclear. Perhaps he feared the disgrace that would have hounded him, or even death, for slaying the king, or perhaps, like David, he feared God and so would not kill the Lord's anointed. This insubordination, which had characterized Saul's conduct before Yahweh, led Saul to take his own life.

"Isn't it interesting, he's very concerned about his image with the enemy but shows little concern for his relationship with God whom he is about to meet?"³⁰⁰

Eli too died as a result of a battle with the Philistines. Some of his sons also died (4:17). Eli had served as Israel's high priest unfaithfully for 40 years when he died (4:18), and Saul had served as her king for about 40 years when he died (13:1). Eli fell off his seat and died (4:18), but Saul fell on his sword and died.³⁰¹ Both men were disappointments to God and His people.

Saul's armorbearer also committed suicide in battle, probably because if he had outlived the one whom he should have protected with his life, he could have been executed for dereliction of duty. The soldiers who went into battle with Saul also perished. The king not only died, but he took many of his own men down with him.

²⁹⁸See Gordon, *I & II Samuel* . . . , p. 202.

²⁹⁹McCarter, p. 443.

³⁰⁰Swindoll, p. 122.

³⁰¹Youngblood, "1, 2 Samuel," pp. 798-99.

The aftermath of the battle 31:7-13

The other Israelite soldiers retreated when they heard that Saul and his sons had died. This left towns in the region open for Philistine seizure. Instead of driving the native inhabitants out of the land Saul had made it possible for them to drive the Israelites out and to reestablish themselves in Galilee (cf. Josh. 1:2-9).

The Philistines cut off Saul's head, as David had earlier cut off the head of Goliath, the Philistine champion (17:51). They hung it as a trophy in the temple of Dagon (1 Chron. 10:10). They circulated Saul's weapons and sent them on a tour of Philistine pagan temples before finally depositing them in the temple of Ashteroth, their chief female deity. David had taken Goliath's head to Jerusalem, and he put his weapons in his own tent at least temporarily (17:54). The giant's sword was in the tabernacle at Nob when David went there (21:9). This book began with scenes from God's temple, but it ends with scenes in the temples of Israel's pagan enemies.³⁰² David's faith had brought Israel success, but Saul's disobedience had lost it.

The Philistines fastened Saul's decapitated corpse on the wall of their nearby town of Beth-shan. In the ancient Near East the treatment of a corpse was very significant. If people honored a person, they treated his corpse with care and gave it an honorable burial, but if they did not respect him, they treated his dead body with contempt. The Philistines showed great disrespect for Saul by hanging his dead body on the wall of Beth-shan. This town stood at the east end of the Jezreel Valley near where the battle had taken place. Contrast their respect for David in chapter 29.

However, the men of Jabesh-gilead rescued Saul's corpse from further humiliation, burned it, probably because the Philistines had abused it and perhaps to prevent disease,³⁰³ and buried the remaining bones. Jabesh-gilead lay about 13 miles east-southeast of Beth-shan. Saul had earlier rescued Jabesh-gilead from the Ammonites (ch. 11). Some of its inhabitants may have been Saul's blood relatives.³⁰⁴ The tamarisk tree under which the people buried Saul was very different from a royal tomb, but that kind of tree was a symbol of life since it was an evergreen. The writer may have wanted us to remember that earlier Saul had played the fool under another tamarisk in Gibeah (cf. 22:6). Later David honored Saul and Jonathan by digging up their bones and burying them more appropriately in their family tomb (2 Sam. 21:12-14). The seven-day fast also honored Saul but was much less than the honors granted other great leaders of Israel (cf. Num. 20:29; Deut. 34:8). The writer evidently recorded all these details to show the ignominy in which Saul died because he departed from the Lord.

This is how the life of Israel's first king, the man after the Israelites' own heart, ended (cf. 1 Chron. 10:13-14; Hos. 13:11). He was full of promise at his anointing having many natural qualities that could have contributed to a successful reign. Unfortunately he did

³⁰²Ibid., p. 800.

³⁰³Baldwin, p. 171.

³⁰⁴See my comments on 11:6-11.

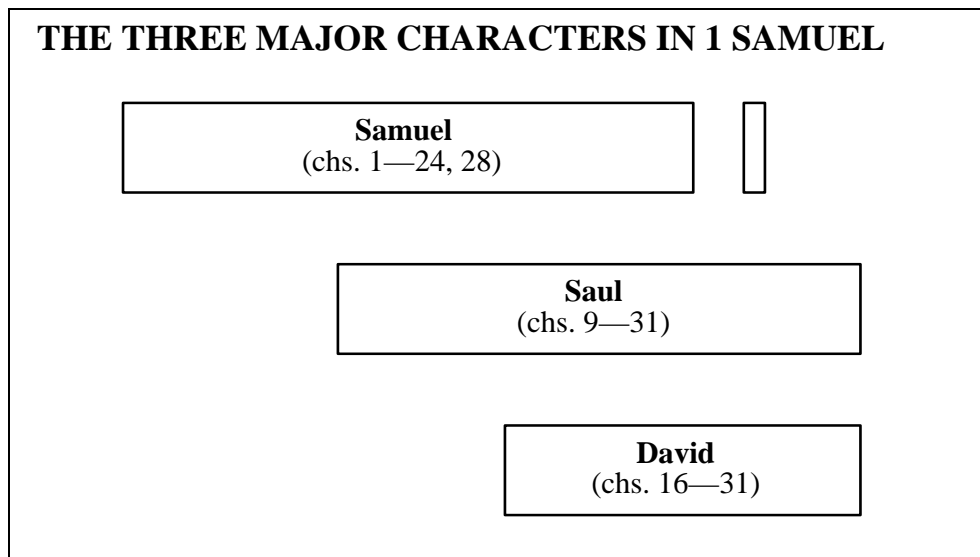
not become a source of blessing to Israel and the world nor did God bless him personally. Instead he became a curse to Israel, the world, and himself. He did so because he failed to acknowledge Yahweh as the true king of Israel and because he failed to view himself as Yahweh's servant. His life teaches us that the key to blessing or cursing is one's trust and obedience to God.

"At the end . . . much remains to praise, much to blame, and much to wonder at."³⁰⁵

Note the differences between Saul's death and Jesus Christ's. Jesus was consistently trusting and obedient to His Father's will. He laid down His life as a sacrifice for others rather than taking it Himself. He spent the night before His death in prayer to His Father whereas Saul spent his last night with a medium. Jesus Christ blessed many through His death, even the whole human race, but Saul brought blessing to others through his death only because it cleared the way for someone better.

Chapters 21—31 contrast the rise of David and the fall of Saul. The reason for both was clearly the extent of their commitment to Yahweh. We can see their commitment in their responses to His revealed will.

The writer also developed the motif of the proper response to the Lord's anointed in this part of the book. David's respect for the priests and His seeking of God's will through them shows the proper attitude. Saul on the other hand slaughtered them, showing that he no longer cared about the worship of Yahweh, and sought guidance from the spiritual underworld. God spared people who acknowledged David as His anointed, and they became sources of fertility. Those who opposed David suffered God's curse and died.



³⁰⁵R. B. Sewall, *The Vision of Tragedy*, p. 32.

Bibliography

- Ackroyd, Peter R. *The First Book of Samuel*. Cambridge Bible Commentary on the New English Bible series. Cambridge, Eng.: University Press, 1971.
- _____. "The Verb Love—'Aheb in the David-Jonathan Narratives—A Footnote." *Vetus Testamentum* 25:2 (April 1975):213-14.
- Aharoni, Yohanan, and Michael Avi-Yonah. *The Macmillan Bible Atlas*. Revised ed., New York: Macmillan Publishing Co., 1977.
- Ahlstrom, G. W. "I Samuel 1,15." *Biblica* 60:2 (1979):254.
- _____. "The Travels of the Ark: A Religio-Political Composition." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 43 (1984):141-49.
- Albright, William F. *The Archaeology of Palestine*. 1949. Revised ed. Pelican Archaeology series. Harmondsworth, Middlesex, Eng.: Penguin Books, 1956.
- _____. "What Were the Cherubim?" *Biblical Archaeologist* 1:1 (1938):1-3.
- "Annotated Bibliography on I Samuel." *Biblical Viewpoint* 14:2 (November 1980):144-49.
- Ap-Thomas, D. R. "Saul's 'Uncle.'" *Vetus Testamentum* 11 (1961):241-45.
- Archer, Gleason L, Jr. *Encyclopedia of Bible Difficulties*. Regency Reference Library series. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1982.
- _____. *A Survey of Old Testament Introduction*. Revised ed. Chicago: Moody Press, 1974.
- Baldwin, Joyce G. *1 & 2 Samuel*. Tyndale Old Testament commentaries series. Leicester, Eng., and Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 1988.
- Baltzer, Klaus. *The Covenant Formulary*. Philadelphia: Fortress Press, 1971.
- Barker, Kenneth L. "The Antiquity and Historicity of the Patriarchal Narratives." In *A Tribute to Gleason Archer*, pp.131-39. Edited by Walter C. Kaiser Jr. and Ronald F. Youngblood. Chicago: Moody Press, 1986.
- Baxter, J. Sidlow. *Explore the Book*. 6 vols. London: Marshall, Morgan, and Scott, 1965.
- Bentzen, Aage. "The Cultic Use of the Story of the Ark in Samuel." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 67 (1948):37-53.

- Berghuis, Kent D. "A Biblical Perspective on Fasting." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 158:629 (January-March 2001):86-103.
- Berlin, Adele. "Characterization in Biblical Narrative: David's Wives." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 23 (July 1982):69-85.
- Beuken, W. A. M. "1 Samuel 28: The Prophet as 'Hammer of Witches.'" *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 6 (1978):3-17.
- Birch, Bruce C. "The Choosing of Saul at Mizpah." *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 37:4 (1975):447-54.
- Blaikie, William G. *The First Book of Samuel*. 1887; reprint ed. Minneapolis: Klock and Klock, 1978.
- Blenkinsopp, Joseph. "Kiriath-jearim and the Ark." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 88 (1969):143-56.
- Block, Daniel Isaac. *The Gods of the Nations: Studies in Ancient Near Eastern National Theology*. Jackson: Evangelical Theological Society, 1988.
- Boogaart, T. A. "History and Drama in the Story of David and Goliath." *Reformed Review* 38:3 (1985):204-14.
- Brauner, Ronald A. "'To Grasp the Hem' and 1 Samuel 15:27." *Journal of Near Eastern Studies* 6 (1974):135-38.
- Bright, John A. *A History of Israel*. Philadelphia: Westminster Press, 1959.
- Bruce, F. F. *The Hard Sayings of Jesus*. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 1983.
- Brueggemann, Walter. "1 Samuel 1: A Sense of a Beginning," *Zeitschrift für die Alttestamentliche Wissenschaft* 102:1 (1990):33-48.
- _____. *First and Second Samuel*. Interpretation: A Bible Commentary for Teaching and Preaching series. Louisville: John Knox Press, 1990.
- Bury, J. B.; S. A. Cook; and F. E. Adcock, eds. *The Cambridge Ancient History*. 12 vols. 2nd ed. reprinted. Cambridge, Eng.: University Press, 1928.
- Campbell, Antony F. *The Ark Narrative [1 Sam 4—6; 2 Sam 6]: A Form-Critical and Traditio-Historical Study*. Missoula, Mont.: Scholars Press, 1975.
- _____. "Yahweh and the Ark: A Case Study in Narrative." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 98:1 (1979):31-43.

- Carter, Leslie. *Warring Faith*. London: Victory Press, 1961.
- Chafin, Kenneth L. *1, 2 Samuel*. The Communicator's Commentary series. Dallas: Word Books, 1989.
- Chaney, Marvin L. "Systemic Study of the Israelite Monarchy." *Semeia* 37 (1986):53-76.
- Chisholm, Robert B., Jr. "Does God 'Change His Mind'?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 152:608 (October-December 1995):387-99.
- _____. "Does God Deceive?" *Bibliotheca Sacra* 155:617 (January-March 1998):11-28.
- _____. "The Polemic against Baalism in Israel's Early History and Literature." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 151:603 (July-September 1994):267-83.
- Claassen, W. T. "1 Sam. 3:19 - A Case of Context and Semantics." *Journal of Northwest Semitic Languages* 8 (1980):1-9.
- Clark, R. E. D. "The Large Numbers of the Old Testament." *Journal of Transactions of the Victoria Institute* 87 (1955):82-92.
- Constable, Thomas L. "Analysis of Bible Books—Old Testament." Paper submitted for course 685 Analysis of Bible Books—Old Testament. Dallas Theological Seminary, January 1967.
- _____. "What Prayer Will and Will Not Change." In *Essays in Honor of J. Dwight Pentecost*, pp. 99-113. Edited by Stanley D. Toussaint and Charles H. Dyer. Chicago: Moody Press, 1986.
- Craigie, Peter C. *The Problem of War in the Old Testament*. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1978.
- Crockett, William Day. *A Harmony of the Books of Samuel, Kings, and Chronicles*. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1973.
- Darby, John Nelson. *Synopsis of the Books of the Bible*. 5 vols. Revised ed. New York: Loizeaux Brothers Publishers, 1942.
- "David Won Against Goliath Because of Giant's Eyesight?" Albuquerque, N.Mex., newspaper, May 1974.
- Davies, P. R. "The History of the Ark in the Books of Samuel." *Journal of Northwest Semitic Languages* 5 (1977):9-18.
- Davis, John J. *Biblical Numerology*. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1968.

- Davis, John J. and John C. Whitcomb. *A History of Israel*. Reprint ed., Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1980.
- Deem, Ariella. "'And the Stone Sank Into His Forehead': A Note on 1 Samuel xvii 49." *Vetus Testamentum* 28:3 (1978):349-51.
- de Vaux, Roland. *Ancient Israel: Its Life and Institutions*. Translated by John McHugh. New York: McGraw-Hill, 1961.
- _____. *The Bible and the Ancient Near East*. Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday and Co., 1967.
- Demsky, Aaron. "Geba, Gibeah, and Gibeon—An Historico-Geographic Riddle." *Bulletin of the American School of Oriental Research* 212 (December 1973):26-31.
- Dothan, Trude. "Ekron of the Philistines. Part I: Where They Came From, How They Settled Down, and the Place They Worshipped In." *Biblical Archaeology Review* 16:1 (1990):26-36.
- _____. *The Philistines and Their Material Culture*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1982.
- Driver, S. R. *Notes on the Hebrew Text and the Topography of the Books of Samuel*. 1913; 2nd ed. revised, Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1966.
- Dumbrell, William J. *Covenant and Creation*. Nashville: Thomas Nelson, 1984.
- Duplaix, Nicole. "Fleas: The Lethal Leapers." *National Geographic* 173:5 (May 1988):672-94.
- Eastwood, John H. "Hannah, the Woman Who Prayed." *Presbyterian Journal*, 9 February 1983, pp. 11, 18.
- Edelmann, Diane. "Saul's Battle Against Amaleq (1 Sam. 15)." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 35 (June 1986):71-84.
- _____. "Saul's Rescue of Jabesh-Gilead (I Sam 11:1-11): Sorting Story from History." *Zeitschrift für die Alttestamentliche Wissenschaft* 96:2 (1984):195-209.
- Edwards, Gene. *A Tale of Three Kings: A Study in Brokenness*. Auburn, Maine: Christian Books, 1980.
- Eichrodt, Walther. *Theology of the Old Testament*. 2 vols. Translated by J. A. Baker. Philadelphia: Westminster Press, 1961.

- Eslinger, Lyle. *Kingship of God in Crisis: A Close Reading of 1 Samuel 1—12*. Bible and Literature monograph 10. Sheffield, Eng.: Almond, 1985.
- _____. "Viewpoints and Point of View in 1 Samuel 8-12." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 26 (June 1983):61-76.
- Eves, Terry L. "One Ammonite Invasion or Two? 1 Sam 10:27-11:2 in the Light of 4QSam^a." *Westminster Theological Journal* 44:2 (Fall 1982):308-26.
- Fensham, F. Charles. "Did a Treaty Between the Israelites and the Kenites Exist?" *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 175 (October 1964):51-54.
- Finkelstein, Emunah. "An Ignored Haplography in Samuel." *Journal of Semitic Studies* 4:4 (October 1959):356-57.
- Fretheim, Terence E. "Divine Foreknowledge, Divine Constancy, and the Rejection of Saul's Kingship." *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 47:4 (October 1985):595-602.
- Gaebelein, Arno C. *The Annotated Bible*. 4 vols. Reprint ed. Chicago: Moody Press, and New York: Loizeaux Brothers, Inc., 1970.
- Gehrke, R. O. *I and II Samuel*. St. Louis: Concordia Publishing House, 1968.
- Geyer, John B. "Mice and Rites in 1 Samuel V-VI." *Vetus Testamentum* 31:3 (July 1981):293-304.
- Gnuse, Robert Karl. *The Dream Theophany of Samuel: Its Structure in Relation to Ancient Near Eastern Dreams and Its Theological Significance*. Lanham, Md.: University Press of America, 1984.
- Goldman, S. *Samuel*. London: Soncino Press, 1951.
- Gordon, Robert P. *I & II Samuel: A Commentary*. Library of Biblical Interpretation series. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, Regency Reference Library, 1986.
- _____. "David's Rise and Saul's Demise: Narrative Analogy in 1 Samuel 24—26." *Tyndale Bulletin* 31 (1980):37-64.
- _____. "Saul's Meningitis According to Targum 1 Samuel XIX 24" *Vetus Testamentum* 37:1 (January 1987):39-49.
- _____. *I & 2 Samuel, A Commentary*. Exeter, England: Paternoster Press, 1986.
- Gottwald, Norman K. *The Tribes of Yahweh, A Sociology of the Religion of Liberated Israel, 1250-1050 B. C. E*. London: S C M Press, 1980.

Graesser, Carl F. "Standing Stones in Ancient Palestine." *Biblical Archaeologist* 35:2 (1972):34-63.

Greenhow, Peter N. "Did Samuel Sin?" *Grace Journal* 11:2 (1970):34-40.

Greenstein, Edward L. "'To Grasp the Hem' in Ugaritic Literature." *Vetus Testamentum* 32:2 (April 1982):217-18.

Gunn, David M. *The Fate of King Saul: An Interpretation of a Biblical Story*. Journal for the Study of the Old Testament Supplement 14. Sheffield, Eng.: Journal for the Study of the Old Testament, 1980.

_____. "Narrative Patterns and Oral Tradition in Judges and Samuel." *Vetus Testamentum* 24:3 (July 1974):286-317.

_____. "Traditional composition in the 'Succession Narrative.'" *Vetus Testamentum* 26:2 (1976):214-29.

Haley, John W. *An Examination of the Alleged Discrepancies of the Bible*. Reprint ed. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1958.

Harris, Scott L. "1 Samuel VIII 7-8." *Vetus Testamentum* 31:1 (January 1981):79-80.

Harton, George M., "Fulfillment of Deuteronomy 28-30 in History and in Eschatology." Th.D. dissertation, Dallas Theological Seminary, 1981.

Heater, Homer, Jr. "A Theology of Samuel and Kings." In *A Biblical Theology of the Old Testament*, pp. 115-55. Edited by Roy B. Zuck. Chicago: Moody Press, 1991.

_____. "Young David and the Practice of Wisdom." In *Integrity of Heart, Skillfulness of Hands*, pp. 50-61. Edited by Charles H. Dyer and Roy B. Zuck. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1994.

Hertzberg, Hans Wilhelm. *I and II Samuel*. Philadelphia: Westminster Press, 1976.

Hindson, Edward E. *The Philistines and the Old Testament*. Baker Studies in Biblical Archaeology series. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1971.

Hodges, Zane C. "The Salvation of Samuel." *Grace Evangelical Society News* 9:3 (May-June 1994):1, 3-4.

_____. "The Salvation of Saul." *Grace Evangelical Society News* 9:4 (July-August 1994):1, 3.

- Hoffner, Harry A., Jr. "A Hittite Analogue to the David and Goliath Contest of Champions?" *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 30 (1968):220-25.
- Horner, Tom. *Jonathan Loved David: Homosexuality in Biblical Times*. Philadelphia: Westminster Press, 1978.
- Howard, David M., Jr. "The Transfer of Power From Saul to David in 1 Sam 16:13-14." *Journal of the Evangelical Theological Society* 32:4 (1989):473-83.
- Humphreys, W. Lee. "From Tragic Hero to Villain: A Study of the Figure of Saul and the Development of 1 Samuel." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 22 (February 1982):95-117.
- _____. "The Rise and Fall of King Saul: A Study of an Ancient Narrative Stratum in 1 Samuel." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 18 (October 1980):74-90.
- _____. "The Tragedy of King Saul: A Study of the Structure of 1 Samuel 9-31." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 6 (February 1978):18-27.
- Janzen, J. Gerald. "'Samuel Opened the Doors of the House of Yahweh' (1 Samuel 3.15)." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 26 (June 1983):89-96.
- Jobling, David. "Saul's Fall and Jonathan's Rise: Tradition and Redaction in 1 Sam 14:1-46." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 95:3 (1976):367-76.
- Johnson, John E. "The Old Testament Offices as Paradigm for Pastoral Identity." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 152:606 (April-June 1995):182-200.
- Josephus, Flavius. *The Works of Flavius Josephus*. Translated by William Whiston. *Antiquities of the Jews*. London: T. Nelson and Sons, 1866.
- Kaiser, Walter C., Jr. *Toward Old Testament Ethics*. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1983.
- Keil, C. F. and Franz Delitzsch. *Biblical Commentary on the Books of Samuel*. Translated by James Martin. *Biblical Commentary on the Old Testament*. Reprint ed., Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1960.
- Kessler, Martin. "Narrative Technique in 1 Sm 16,1-13." *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 32:4 (October 1970):543-54.
- Kirkpatrick, A. F. *The First Book of Samuel*. Cambridge Bible for Schools and Colleges series. Cambridge, Eng.: University Press, 1891.
- Kitchen, K. A. *The Bible In the World*. Downers Grove, Ill.: InterVarsity Press, 1977.

- Klein, Ralph W. *1 Samuel*. Word Biblical Commentary series. Waco: Word Books, 1983.
- Kochavi, Moshe, and Aaron Demsky. "An Israelite Village from the Days of the Judges." *Biblical Archaeology Review* 4:3 (1978):19-21.
- Kohler, Ludwig. *Old Testament Theology*. Translated by A. S. Todd. Philadelphia: Westminster Press, 1957.
- Laney, J. Carl. *First and Second Samuel*. Everyman's Bible Commentary series. Chicago: Moody Press, 1982.
- Lange, John Peter, ed. *Commentary on the Holy Scriptures*. 12 vols. Reprint ed., Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1960. Vol. 3: *Samuel—Kings*, by Chr. Fr. David Erdmann and Karl Chr. W. T. Bahr. Translated, enlarged, and edited by C. H. Toy, John A. Broadus, Edwin Harwood, and W. G. Sumner.
- Lemche, Niels Peter. "David's Rise." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 10 (November 1978):2-25.
- Levenson, Jon D. "1 Samuel 25 as Literature and as History." *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 40 (1978):11-28.
- Luck, G. Coleman. "The First Glimpse of the First King of Israel." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 123:489 (January-March 1966):60-66.
- _____. "The First Meeting of Saul and Samuel." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 124:495 (July-September 1967):254-61.
- _____. "Israel's Demand for a King." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 120:477 (January-March 1963):56-64.
- Mackie, G. M. *Bible Manners and Customs*. New York: Fleming H. Revell, 1898.
- Martin, John A. "Studies in 1 and 2 Samuel." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 141:561 (January-March 1984):28-42; 562 (April-June 1984):131-45; 563 (July-September 1984):209-22; 564 (October-December 1984):303-14.
- Mathewson, Steven D. "Guidelines for Understanding and Proclaiming Old Testament Narratives." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 154:616 (October-December 1997):410-35.
- Mavrodes, George I. "David, Goliath, and Limited War." *Reformed Journal* 33:8 (1983):6-8.
- Mazar, Benjamin. "The Military elite of King David." *Vetus Testamentum* 13 (1963):10-20.

- McCarter, P. Kyle, Jr. *1 Samuel*. Anchor Bible series. Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday and Co., 1980.
- _____. "The Apology of David." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 99:4 (1980):489-504.
- McKane, William. *I and II Samuel*. London: SCM Press, 1963.
- Mendelsohn, I. "Samuel's Denunciation of Kingship in the Light of the Akkadian Documents from Ugarit." *Bulletin of the American Schools of Oriental Research* 143 (October 1956):17-22.
- Merrill, Eugene H. "The Book of Ruth: Narration and Shared Themes." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 142:566 (April-June 1985):130-41.
- _____. "1 Samuel." In *The Bible Knowledge Commentary: Old Testament*, pp. 431-55. Edited by John F. Walvoord and Roy B. Zuck. Wheaton: Scripture Press Publications, Victor Books, 1985.
- _____. *Kingdom of Priests*. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1987.
- _____. "Paul's Use of 'About 405 Years' in Acts 13:20." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 138:551 (July-September 1981):246-57.
- Meyer, F. B. *David: Shepherd and King*. Condensed Christian Books series. Westchester, Ill.: Good News Publishers, 1960.
- _____. *Samuel the Prophet*. Chicago: Fleming H. Revell, n.d.
- Milgrom, Jacob. "Of Hems and Tassels." *Biblical Archaeology Review* 9:3 (May-June 1983):61-65.
- Miller, J. Maxwell. "Saul's Rise to Power: Some Observations Concerning 1 Sam 9:1-10:16; 10:26-11:15 and 13:2-14:46." *Catholic Biblical Quarterly* 36:2 (1974):157-74.
- Miller, Patrick D., Jr. and J. J. M. Roberts. *The Hand of the Lord: A Reassessment of the "Ark Narrative" of 1 Samuel*. Baltimore: Johns Hopkins Press, 1977.
- Miscall, Peter D. *1 Samuel: A Literary Reading*. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 1986.
- Monson, James M. *The Land Between*. Jerusalem: By the author, P.O. Box 1276, 1983.
- Morgan, G. Campbell. *Living Messages of the Books of the Bible*. 2 vols. New York: Fleming H. Revell Co., 1912.

Munn-Rankin, J. M. "Diplomacy in Western Asia in the Early Second Millennium B.C." *Iraq* 18 (1956):68-110.

New Bible Dictionary, 1962 ed. S.v. "Dagon," by Kenneth A. Kitchen.

Newsome, James D., Jr., ed. *A Synoptic Harmony of Samuel, Kings, and Chronicles*. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1986.

Payne, David F. *I & II Samuel*. Daily Study Bible series. Philadelphia: Westminster Press, 1982.

Payne, J. Barton. "Saul and the Changing Will of God." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 129:516 (October-December 1972):321-25.

Pell, Peter J., Jr. *First Samuel Bible Class Notes*. Grand Rapids: Gospel Folio Press, n.d.

Pentecost, J. Dwight. *Thy Kingdom Come*. Wheaton: Scripture Press Publications, Victor Books, 1990.

Pfeiffer, Charles F., and Howard F. Vos. *The Wycliffe Historical Geography of Bible Lands*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1967.

Ridout, Samuel. *King Saul*. Bible Truth Library series. New York: Loizeaux Brothers, n.d.

Roberts, J. J. M. "The Hand of Yahweh." *Vetus Testamentum* 21:2 (1971):244-51.

Rushing, Ronald Lee. "Phinehas' Covenant of Peace." Th.D. dissertation, Dallas Theological Seminary, 1988.

Sailhamer, John H. *The Pentateuch as Narrative*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1992.

Schwantes, Siegfried J. *A Short History of the Ancient Near East*. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1965.

Segal, M. H. "The Composition of the Books of Samuel." *Jewish Quarterly Review* 55 (1964-65):318-39; 56 (1965-66):32-50.

Sellers, Ovid R. "Sling Stones in Biblical Times." *Biblical Archaeologist* 2:4 (1939):41-44.

Sewall, R. B. *The Vision of Tragedy*. New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1962.

Sharpe, Norville Wallace. "David, Elhanan, and the Literary Digest." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 86 (July 1929):319-26.

- Shaviv, Shemuel. "Nabi and Nagid in 1 Samuel IX 1 - X 16." *Vetus Testamentum* 34:1 (January 1984):108-13.
- Simon, Uriel. "Samuel's Call To Prophecy: Form Criticism with Close Reading." *Prooftexts* 1:2 (May 1981):119-32.
- Smith, H. P. *A Critical and Exegetical Commentary on the Books of Samuel*. International Critical Commentary series. Edinburgh: T. & T. Clark, 1904.
- Smith, J. M. P. "The Character of King David." *Journal of Biblical Literature* 52 (1933):1-11.
- Smith, Morton. "The So-Called 'Biography of David' in the Books of Samuel and Kings." *Harvard Theological Review* 44 (1951):167-69.
- Stek, John. *The Former Prophets: A Syllabus*. Unpublished, 1985.
- Student Map Manual*. Jerusalem: Pictorial Archive (Near Eastern History) Est., 1979.
- Sturdy, John. "The Original Meaning of 'Is Saul Also Among the Prophets?' (1 Samuel X 11, 12; XIX 24)." *Vetus Testamentum* 20:2 (April 1970):206-13.
- Swindoll, Charles R. *David: A Man of Passion and Destiny*. Great Lives from God's Word series. Dallas: Word Publishing, 1997.
- Talmon, Shemaryahu. *King, Cult, and Calendar in Ancient Israel: Collected Studies*. Jerusalem: Magnes Press, 1986.
- Thiele, Edwin R. *The Mysterious Numbers of the Hebrew Kings*. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1965.
- Thomas, D. Winton. "A Note on *noda'* in I Samuel XXII. 6." *Journal of Theological Studies* 21:2 (October 1970):401-2.
- Thomson, Clive A. "Samuel, the Ark, and the Priesthood." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 118:417 (July-September 1961):259-63.
- Tidwell, N. L. "The Linen Ephod: 1 Sam. II 18 and 2 Sam. VI 14." *Vetus Testamentum* 24:4 (October 1974):505-7.
- Tsevat, Matitياهو. "Studies in the Book of Samuel." *Hebrew Union College Annual* 32 (1961):191-216; 33 (1962):107-18; 36 (1965):49-58.
- Tucker, Stanley D. "The Theology of the Book of Samuel: A Study of God's Humiliation or Exaltation of Leaders." *Biblical Viewpoint* 12:2 (1978):152-59.

Unger's Bible Dictionary, 1957 ed. S.v. "Armor."

Walters, S. D. "The Light and the Dark." In *Ascribe to the Lord: Biblical and Other Studies in Memory of Peter C. Craigie*, pp. 567-89. Edited by Lyle Eslinger and Glen Taylor. Sheffield, Eng.: Journal for the Study of the Old Testament, 1988.

Wells, H. G. *The History of Mr. Polly*. New York: The Press of the Reader's Club, 1941.

Wenham, John W. *The Enigma of Evil: Can We Believe in the Goodness of God?*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1985.

_____. "Large Numbers in the Old Testament." *Tyndale Bulletin* 18 (1967):19-53.

West, Stuart A. "The Nuzi Tablets." *Bible and Spade* 10:3-4 (Summer-Autumn 1981):70.

Whitelam, Keith W. "The Defence of David." *Journal for the Study of the Old Testament* 29 (June 1984):61-87.

Wiebe, Donald W. "The Structure of 1 Sam 3: Another View." *Biblische Zeitschrift* 30:2 (1986):256-58.

Wiseman, D. J. "Alalakh." In *Archaeology and Old Testament Study*, pp. 119-35. Edited by D. Winton Thomas. Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1967.

_____. "'Is it peace?'—Covenant and diplomacy." *Vetus Testamentum* 32:3 (1982):311-26.

Wood, Leon. *Israel's United Monarchy*. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1979.

_____. *A Survey of Israel's History*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1970.

Woudstra, Marten H. *The Ark of the Covenant from the Conquest to Kingship*. Philadelphia: Presbyterian and Reformed Publishing Co., 1965.

_____. *The Book of Joshua*. New International Commentary on the Old Testament series. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1981.

Yamauchi, Edwin M. "Cultural Aspects of Marriage in the Ancient World." *Bibliotheca Sacra* 135:539 (July-September 1978):241-52.

Young, Fred E. "First and Second Samuel." In *The Wycliffe Bible Commentary*, pp. 273-305. Edited by Charles F. Pfeiffer and Everett F. Harrison. Chicago: Moody Press, 1962.

Youngblood, Ronald F. "1, 2 Samuel." In *Deuteronomy-2 Samuel*. Vol. 3 of *The Expositor's Bible Commentary*. 12 vols. Edited by Frank E. Gaebelein and Richard P. Polcyn. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1992.

_____. *Faith of Our Fathers*. Glendale, Calif.: Regal Books, 1976.